

St Joseph's School

- 1.3 The Sisters of St Louis came to Middletown on 21 June 1875. Mother Genevieve, the Irish Foundress had, in 1859 led the first group of Sisters to Ireland. The Sisters came to Ireland at the request of the Bishop of Clogher to open a reformatory in Monaghan town to care for deprived children. At the time the problems of child neglect and juvenile delinquency were serious in an island broken by landlordism, emaciated by famine and demoralised by poverty.
- 1.4 The foundation stone of St Joseph's was laid in 1876 and the Industrial School/Orphanage was opened on 25 June 1881. It was the second Industrial School in Ireland. On the opening day the Sisters received the first 8 girls committed to the newly finished Industrial School/Orphanage. In those days the school drew children mainly from the ancient province of Ulster but the original group of girls came from as far apart as Dublin, Belfast and Donegal. Records of the first group of children admitted to the school show the reasons for the committal, the time spent in the school and some of the early comments give a vivid picture of the social history of the day. Most of the children were described as "destitute orphans" found begging, and many of these were as young as 4 years

Office. The records from the time held by the Congregation and also those disclosed to HIA by the Department of Justice, confirm that there was a considerable amount of interaction between government and the Board of Management of St Joseph's between 1952 and 1995. This would be consistent with the fact that St Joseph's was 100% funded by government. The relationship was professional and the Congregation is not surprised to note from the relevant government files which have been disclosed that much of the credit for the excellent working relationships that existed should go to [REDACTED] SR 240 [REDACTED] Director of St Joseph's in whom successive government departments appear to have had the highest level of trust and confidence.

Who inspected St Joseph's on behalf of the regulator between 1922 and 1995 and when, please provide copies of any inspection reports?

10. Prior to 1952 the Ministry of Home Affairs inspected on an annual basis. After 1952 Inspection obligations were fulfilled on behalf of the Ministry/ NIO by the Department for Health and Social Services (DHSS). Copies of the two reports following major inspections in May 1987 and December 1994 attached and marked 'CD2'.

What were the governance arrangements for St Joseph's?

11. A Deed of Trust dated 1950 entered into by the Trustees of St Joseph's and the Ministry of Home Affairs formed the cornerstone of the governance arrangements in respect of St Joseph's. The Trustees included members of the Congregation of St Louis and the Archbishop of Armagh.
12. According to its statutory obligations under the 1950 and 1968 legislation, the Board of Management maintained, managed and controlled the training school known as St Joseph's was answerable to the Trustees of St Joseph's. Between 1952 when St Joseph's became a training school and 1995 there was a Board of Management in

ESTABLISHMENT OF TRAINING SCHOOL

1950 Act Establishing Training School and Remand Homes:

In 1950 St Joseph's became a Training School and Remand Home. Under this Act the Ministry was obliged to set up Remand Homes and Training Schools which ^{would} cater for Catholics and Protestants. The name Training School was the new name given to replace the 1908 Act which designated such institutions as "Reformatories and Industrial Schools". In 1950 St Patrick's, Glen Road, St Joseph's, Middletown, together with two establishments for Protestant girls and boys were in existence and accepting young people from the Courts.

In order to implement the Act the Ministry of Home Affairs required two recognised Catholic Institutions within the terms of the Act. Both St Joseph's and St Patrick's were invited to become Remand Homes and Training Schools. Since they were already doing the work their agreement meant the registration of St Joseph's together with St Patrick's and two Protestant institutions by the Department and the names submitted to the Courts. However, registration under the new Act had certain conditions. These are laid out in the Act. The major changes were:-

- (1) No voluntary children could be taken in and the schools could not refuse to take a child.
- (2) Since St Joseph's was meeting a statutory need 100% revenue expenditure could be met by Department.
- (3) A Board of Management had to be set up to act on behalf of the Trustees. (I enclose some notes on voluntary homes which highlight the difference).

In 1952 Training School rules were drawn up and this completed the establishment of Training Schools. The Management was vested with wide responsibilities - (Rules enclosed). Under the Act Local Authorities could not set up a Training School unless there was evidence of a deficiency of bed space. Actually no further Training Schools have been set up, with the exception of Lisnevin which is jointly managed by the existing Training Schools.

place. The functions of the Board of Management were set out in the Training School Rules 1952.

Was there a Management or Visiting Board between 1922 and 1995, and how was it comprised?

Management Committee

13. We do not have sufficiently detailed records to confirm any management committee structure prior to 1952 although it is believed there was one in place. As indicated above there was a Board of Management in place from 1952-1995. The numbers on the Management Board appear to have varied over time but were usually between 12 and 20. The Board included representatives of the Trustees of St Joseph's, members of the Congregation of St Louis and local clergy appointed by the Archbishop in his capacity as trustee. From at least 1961 (when we have records to confirm this) the Board also included at least 8 lay professionals. The Ministry of Home Affairs also nominated Board members. All members of the Board of Management were subject to the approval of the Ministry of Home Affairs, later the Northern Ireland Office. From our records I can confirm that the St Joseph's Board met at least quarterly and its sub-committees such as staff, financial and licencing met more frequently. Board meetings would have considered issues such as staffing, financial matters, policy for children, contractors, disciplinary issues and reports from sub-committees.

Board of Visitors

14. We do not have clear records to confirm what arrangements were in place regarding a Board of Visitors prior to 1952 however the Punishment Book which we have retained and which covers the period from 1922 shows a signature and date every 6-12 months which I believe was made by an individual carrying out a visiting/inspection role.

ESTABLISHMENT OF TRAINING SCHOOL

1950 Act Establishing Training School and Remand Homes:

In 1950 St Joseph's became a Training School and Remand Home. Under this Act the Ministry was obliged to set up Remand Homes and Training Schools which ^{would} cater for Catholics and Protestants. The name Training School was the new name given to replace the 1908 Act which designated such institutions as "Reformatories and Industrial Schools". In 1950 St Patrick's, Glen Road, St Joseph's, Middletown, together with two establishments for Protestant girls and boys were in existence and accepting young people from the Courts.

In order to implement the Act the Ministry of Home Affairs required two recognised Catholic Institutions within the terms of the Act. Both St Joseph's and St Patrick's were invited to become Remand Homes and Training Schools. Since they were already doing the work their agreement meant the registration of St Joseph's together with St Patrick's and two Protestant institutions by the Department and the names submitted to the Courts. However, registration under the new Act had certain conditions. These are laid out in the Act. The major changes were:-

- (1) No voluntary children could be taken in and the schools could not refuse to take a child.
- (2) Since St Joseph's was meeting a statutory need 100% revenue expenditure could be met by Department.
- (3) A Board of Management had to be set up to act on behalf of the Trustees. (I enclose some notes on voluntary homes which highlight the difference).

In 1952 Training School rules were drawn up and this completed the establishment of Training Schools. The Management was vested with wide responsibilities - (Rules enclosed). Under the Act Local Authorities could not set up a Training School unless there was evidence of a deficiency of bed space. Actually no further Training Schools have been set up, with the exception of Lisnevin which is jointly managed by the existing Training Schools.



Government of Northern Ireland
MINISTRY OF HOME AFFAIRS

STORMONT, BELFAST 4

Telegrams: Homaff, Belfast

Telephone: Belfast 63210

~~Any reply should be addressed
to: THE SECRETARY~~

Our reference:
Your reference:

15th November, 1965.

Dear Cardinal Conway,

Your Eminence will recall the meeting which took place in September 1964 with Mr. G. B. Newe, Miss Forest and myself at which various questions relating to the care of deprived children were discussed. Amongst the matters touched on was the future of St. Joseph's Training School for Girls at Middletown.

We felt that this establishment, despite the devoted efforts of its staff, was tending rather to lag behind current developments in the Training School service and we have had difficulty in persuading the Manager to be a little more progressive and adventurous in outlook. This school (which is financed entirely from public funds) is required by law to be under the control of a Board of Management, which, in addition to controlling the general policy of the school, should take a personal interest in many aspects of the welfare of the girls. In practice we have found that the Board has for a long time played virtually no part in any aspect in the life of the school and we feel that this has contributed very largely to the difficulty of the staff in seeing beyond the preoccupations of their day-to-day work.

The Manager of the school has for some years now been pressing for the provision of a new class-room and recreation room. We have been reluctant to proceed with this because we have felt that any new building at St. Joseph's should be preceded by a complete reappraisal of the whole method of working of the establishment. St. Joseph's is now the only one of the four main training schools in Northern Ireland in which such a reappraisal has not taken place in recent years.

As I think we mentioned at our previous meeting, a further development within the past 18 months has been a tentative proposal from the Good Shepherd Order to establish a training school in Belfast which would accommodate some of the older girls who are at present sent to St. Joseph's.

We have recently received a letter from the Board of Management of St. Joseph's (our first communication from this body for many years) asking us to proceed urgently with the provision of the recreation and class-room accommodation. We have replied, pointing out the reasons for our reluctance to proceed with this development and suggesting a meeting with the Board to discuss the situation.

Your Eminence will appreciate that the questions at issue concern the total training-school facilities in Northern Ireland for Catholic girls. We are therefore anxious so far as possible to obtain the views of the Church as a whole in Northern Ireland before coming to any final decisions. We also feel that the Ministry is not well placed to take a decision should the need arise which may involve a choice between the possibly conflicting claims of the St. Louis and Good Shepherd Orders.

/For



Government of Northern Ireland
MINISTRY OF HOME AFFAIRS

STORMONT, BELFAST 4

Telegrams: Homaff, Belfast

Telephone: Belfast 63210

~~Any reply should be addressed
to: THE SECRETARY~~

Our reference:

15th November, 1965.

Your reference:

Dear Cardinal Conway,

Your Eminence will recall the meeting which took place in September 1964 with Mr. G. B. Newe, Miss Forest and myself at which various questions relating to the care of deprived children were discussed. Amongst the matters touched on was the future of St. Joseph's Training School for Girls at Middletown.

We felt that this establishment, despite the devoted efforts of its staff, was tending rather to lag behind current developments in the Training School service and we have had difficulty in persuading the Manager to be a little more progressive and adventurous in outlook. This school (which is financed entirely from public funds) is required by law to be under the control of a Board of Management, which, in addition to controlling the general policy of the school, should take a personal interest in many aspects of the welfare of the girls. In practice we have found that the Board has for a long time played virtually no part in any aspect in the life of the school and we feel that this has contributed very largely to the difficulty of the staff in seeing beyond the preoccupations of their day-to-day work.

The Manager of the school has for some years now been pressing for the provision of a new class-room and recreation room. We have been reluctant to proceed with this because we have felt that any new building at St. Joseph's should be preceded by a complete reappraisal of the whole method of working of the establishment. St. Joseph's is now the only one of the four main training schools in Northern Ireland in which such a reappraisal has not taken place in recent years.

As I think we mentioned at our previous meeting, a further development within the past 18 months has been a tentative proposal from the Good Shepherd Order to establish a training school in Belfast which would accommodate some of the older girls who are at present sent to St. Joseph's.

We have recently received a letter from the Board of Management of St. Joseph's (our first communication from this body for many years) asking us to proceed urgently with the provision of the recreation and class-room accommodation. We have replied, pointing out the reasons for our reluctance to proceed with this development and suggesting a meeting with the Board to discuss the situation.

Your Eminence will appreciate that the questions at issue concern the total training-school facilities in Northern Ireland for Catholic girls. We are therefore anxious so far as possible to obtain the views of the Church as a whole in Northern Ireland before coming to any final decisions. We also feel that the Ministry is not well placed to take a decision should the need arise which may involve a choice between the possibly conflicting claims of the St. Louis and Good Shepherd Orders.

/For



Government of Northern Ireland
MINISTRY OF HOME AFFAIRS

STORMONT, BELFAST 4

Telegrams: Homaff, Belfast

Telephone: Belfast 63210

~~Any reply should be addressed
to: THE SECRETARY~~

Our reference:

15th November, 1965.

Your reference:

Dear Cardinal Conway,

Your Eminence will recall the meeting which took place in September 1964 with Mr. G. B. Newe, Miss Forest and myself at which various questions relating to the care of deprived children were discussed. Amongst the matters touched on was the future of St. Joseph's Training School for Girls at Middletown.

We felt that this establishment, despite the devoted efforts of its staff, was tending rather to lag behind current developments in the Training School service and we have had difficulty in persuading the Manager to be a little more progressive and adventurous in outlook. This school (which is financed entirely from public funds) is required by law to be under the control of a Board of Management, which, in addition to controlling the general policy of the school, should take a personal interest in many aspects of the welfare of the girls. In practice we have found that the Board has for a long time played virtually no part in any aspect in the life of the school and we feel that this has contributed very largely to the difficulty of the staff in seeing beyond the preoccupations of their day-to-day work.

The Manager of the school has for some years now been pressing for the provision of a new class-room and recreation room. We have been reluctant to proceed with this because we have felt that any new building at St. Joseph's should be preceded by a complete reappraisal of the whole method of working of the establishment. St. Joseph's is now the only one of the four main training schools in Northern Ireland in which such a reappraisal has not taken place in recent years.

As I think we mentioned at our previous meeting, a further development within the past 18 months has been a tentative proposal from the Good Shepherd Order to establish a training school in Belfast which would accommodate some of the older girls who are at present sent to St. Joseph's.

We have recently received a letter from the Board of Management of St. Joseph's (our first communication from this body for many years) asking us to proceed urgently with the provision of the recreation and class-room accommodation. We have replied, pointing out the reasons for our reluctance to proceed with this development and suggesting a meeting with the Board to discuss the situation.

Your Eminence will appreciate that the questions at issue concern the total training-school facilities in Northern Ireland for Catholic girls. We are therefore anxious so far as possible to obtain the views of the Church as a whole in Northern Ireland before coming to any final decisions. We also feel that the Ministry is not well placed to take a decision should the need arise which may involve a choice between the possibly conflicting claims of the St. Louis and Good Shepherd Orders.

/For

Monday
27 December 1965.

Dear Mr. Parkes,

Thank you for your letter of 15 November 1965. I shall be very glad to discuss the question of St. Joseph's Training School for Girls at Middletown with you after my return to Armagh. I should be glad to see you about 4 p.m. on Wednesday, 15 December, if this is convenient for you.

With kind regards,

Yours sincerely,

Archbishop of Armagh.

Mr. J. H. Parkes,
Ministry of Home Affairs,
Stormont,
BELFAST, 4.

- 1) For whom exactly would the four thousand cases?
- 2) What in business would be a complete re-organisation of the method of working notes Government involve?

Reference: T.C.831

4th May, 1966.

Dear Cardinal Conway,

As I explained in conversation with Your Eminence's Secretary last week, we have just had a meeting with the Managers of St. Joseph's Training School. This was the meeting referred to in my letter to Your Eminence of 15th November, 1965; we had hoped to postpone it until you yourself had had an opportunity of meeting the people concerned but this did not prove possible.

The problems relating to this training school are still broadly as set out in my letter of 15th November and may be summarized as follows:-

- (a) The Board of Management has never played an effective part in the running of the establishment but has left things entirely in the hands of the Manager herself.
- (b) The school has been pressing us for years to provide a recreation hall which we regard as a limited addition to existing facilities, while we on the other hand have been pressing the Managers to re-think completely the way in which the school is organised and run. We have been reluctant to approve any short-term improvements which might of themselves prejudice a successful long-term re-organisation.
- (c) The whole future of St. Joseph's is in some doubt following the admittedly tentative proposal from the Good Shepherd Order to provide training school facilities in Belfast for at least the older and more difficult girls.

Last Friday we met [redacted] of the Middletown Convent. SR 237 [redacted] who is Manager of the Training School, and [redacted], who is Secretary to the Board of Management. In view of the composition of the party we did not feel it appropriate to discuss the first of the three problems mentioned above. On the second question we agreed to consider the immediate provision of temporary additional accommodation on the clear understanding that a complete re-assessment would be made of the method of caring for the girls at St. Joseph's; the re-assessment would include visits to comparable establishments in England and Scotland. The Managers also accepted with enthusiasm the suggestion that they should consider the establishment of a "pre-licence hostel" away from Middletown where girls could spend the last part of their period of detention in conditions of modified freedom, possibly with outside employment. On the third question we made it clear that any fundamental re-assessment of the

role of St. Joseph's would of course be dependent on a decision one way or the other as to whether some other organisation would enter the field. We also made it clear that we did not feel that it was for us to make a choice between the two Orders. We explained that although the full cost of training schools is met out of public funds the law provides that they may be established and administered by voluntary bodies and it is also the law that provision must be made for children of different religious persuasions. In these circumstances the churches must inevitably have a major say in the provision of the schools and where, as in this instance, a question arises which may affect the total provision of training school accommodation for Catholic girls in Northern Ireland we would regard the views of your Church as of paramount importance in arriving at a decision.

We are most anxious to see an improvement in the training school facilities for Catholic girls but any major improvement will be a long-term and expensive business. Before any binding commitments are entered into, therefore, we are most anxious to have from your Church a considered recommendation as to where and under whose auspices the training school facilities should be provided.

Yours sincerely,

J. H. Parkes.

His Eminence Cardinal Conway,
D.D., D.C.L.,
Archbishop of Armagh,
Ara Coeli,
ARMAGH.

Armagh.

18 May 1966.

Dear Mr. Parkes,

At a conference at Middletown at which the Mother General of the St. Louis Sisters was present I outlined the views of the Ministry as to the kind of steps which might be taken at Middletown and I found the Sisters very understanding and co-operative. In particular they have agreed to send two members of the staff for training next year, two more the following year, and one or two the year after that. They also saw the advantages of having some new blood on the Board of Governors and I promised to get in touch with them about this later. They also understand, and fully accept, the idea of a reappraisal of the methods at Middletown emerging from a re-constituted board which would visit appropriate establishments in Great Britain.

All this is at least a beginning and I must say that personally I was very pleased indeed with the spirit and results of the conference.

The Sisters are still very interested in the suggestion that there might be a small 'pre-licensing' unit in Graigavon.

In the course of our discussions I asked the Sisters about the subsequent history of the girls who had passed through their schools and I must say that I could not fail to be impressed by what they told me.

With kind regards and all good wishes,

Yours sincerely,

Mr. J. H. Parkes,
Ministry of Home Affairs,
Stormont,
BELFAST, 4.

Archbishop of Armagh.

1. PURPOSE OF THE SCHOOL

- 1.1 Section 138 of the Act gives the Ministry power to "provide training schools and the Ministry may make arrangements with other bodies or persons for the provision of such schools." St Joseph's Training School is a training school as defined in Section 137 Children and Young Persons Act (NI) 1968.
- 1.2 The Sisters of St Louis came to Middletown on 21 June 1875. Mother Genevieve, the Irish Foundress had, in 1859 led the first group of Sisters to Ireland. The Sisters came to Ireland at the request of the Bishop of Clogher to open a reformatory in Monaghan town to care for deprived children. At that time the problems of child neglect and juvenile delinquency were serious in an island broken by landlordism, emaciated by famine and demoralised by poverty.
- 1.3 The foundation stone for St Joseph's was laid in 1876 and the Industrial School/Orphanage was opened on 25 June 1881. It was the second industrial school in Ireland. On the opening day the Sisters received the first 8 girls committed to the newly finished industrial school/orphanage. In those days the school drew its children mainly from the ancient Province of Ulster but the original group of girls came from as far apart as Dublin, Belfast and Donegal. Records of the first group of children admitted to the school show the reasons for committal, the time spent in the school and some of the early comments give a vivid picture of the social history of the day. Most of the children were described as "destitute orphans" found begging, and many of these were as young as 4 years of age. Historical documents show that there was extensive development in the first 50 years. On the same campus, sharing the same facilities, were an exclusive boarding school, industrial school/orphanage and a primary school. With the Partition of Ireland the admissions of children coming from the South virtually ceased.
- 1.4 The need for change was recognised and in 1942, the Sisters of St Louis Order who are radical and enlightened in their thinking, decided to close the boarding school and to concentrate their efforts on the industrial school/orphanage.
- 1.5 In 1950 the then Ministry of Home Affairs invited St Joseph's to become a training school, within the terms of the Children and Young Persons Act (NI) 1950. This led to St Joseph's becoming a training school and the orphanage closed. In 1965 the late Cardinal Conway and the Superior General of the St Louis Order met officials of the Ministry of Home Affairs to plan the reorganisation of St Joseph's. The outcome of these discussions included

The Act decreed that a Training School could be closed by the Department if it failed to comply with the Act. Since the Trustees of the Catholic Schools owned the property they could also withdraw from the scheme on giving a six month's notice.

In the late 50's early 60's St Patrick's began an extensive building programme. Much of the early negotiations about capital funding and maintaining voluntary status was done with them and the Bishop of Down and Connor. Unlike the arrangement with Maintained Schools where only a certain percentage of capital expenditure was met by the Department the negotiations with Catholic Training Schools agreed to a 100% Capital Expenditure funding under certain conditions which I will enclose as they pertain to Middletown.

In 1965 the Department approached Cardinal Conway who met with Mother Columbanus, Superior General, to discuss the development of the Training School as preparation for new legislation. The outcome of this was that two Sisters were trained (myself and [REDACTED])

[REDACTED] The 1968 Act did not change the status of Training Schools. In 1969 negotiations began about development. To justify the use of 100% funding on Capital Expenditure for a voluntary organisation, the Ministry required some safeguards. These safeguards had previously been negotiated with St Patrick's and were enshrined in 1968 Act enclosed, Section 150.

- (1) The property would be vested.
- (2) The Trustees would undertake to manage the school, etc, and in the event of mismanagement or a withdrawal from the work the Trustees would repay all monies granted.

Before the Home Affairs finalised plans for re-development the Congregation was given three months to consider the implications of 100 % Capital Grant. At that point we could have closed. If, however, we agreed to accept the grant the implications were clearly stated (same as those already agreed with St Patrick's and enclosed Section 150 of the Act).

- (1) In the event of withdrawal all Capital Expenditure to be returned, together with whatever interest had accrued.

- (2) The same would be true if there was any serious mismanagement that would necessitate a withdrawal of certification.

The Catholic Training Schools were regarded as institutions providing statutory services but maintaining the voluntary status. The Sisters of St Louis and De La Salle Brothers being responsible for the day to day management of their respective institutions. In the acceptance of 100% capital funding the Trustees:

- (a) relinquished the right to withdraw without meeting their financial obligations;
- (b) this could only be guaranteed if the Senior Management of the school was answerable to the Congregation through whom the Trustees could discharge their obligations.

The Government on its part was bound to maintain St Joseph's as a Training School and could not change its use or role arbitrarily.

place. The functions of the Board of Management were set out in the Training School Rules 1952.

Was there a Management or Visiting Board between 1922 and 1995, and how was it comprised?

Management Committee

13. We do not have sufficiently detailed records to confirm any management committee structure prior to 1952 although it is believed there was one in place. As indicated above there was a Board of Management in place from 1952-1995. The numbers on the Management Board appear to have varied over time but were usually between 12 and 20. The Board included representatives of the Trustees of St Joseph's, members of the Congregation of St Louis and local clergy appointed by the Archbishop in his capacity as trustee. From at least 1961 (when we have records to confirm this) the Board also included at least 8 lay professionals. The Ministry of Home Affairs also nominated Board members. All members of the Board of Management were subject to the approval of the Ministry of Home Affairs, later the Northern Ireland Office. From our records I can confirm that the St Joseph's Board met at least quarterly and its sub-committees such as staff, financial and licencing met more frequently. Board meetings would have considered issues such as staffing, financial matters, policy for children, contractors, disciplinary issues and reports from sub-committees.

Board of Visitors

14. We do not have clear records to confirm what arrangements were in place regarding a Board of Visitors prior to 1952 however the Punishment Book which we have retained and which covers the period from 1922 shows a signature and date every 6-12 months which I believe was made by an individual carrying out a visiting/inspection role.

8. SR 240 commenced work in 1968, and as Deputy Manager and then Director in 1970 she quickly assumed management responsibility. It is clear from all the evidence that she "*moulded*" the character of St Joseph's going forward until its closure in 2000. It is submitted that there was a positive and caring culture at St. Joseph's and that this is demonstrated through a number of sources of evidence. The first hand oral evidence from SR 235, SR 234, Sister Canice and SR 247 demonstrated a culture of care focused on welfare, education, understanding and strenuous efforts being made to promote self-esteem and emotional well-being.
9. SSL does not underestimate the significant challenges faced by young girls admitted to St Joseph's before and after 1952. Many children had to deal with multiple domestic issues which resulted in their admission to the social care system. Before admission to St Joseph's, many girls had to cope with marital discord between parents, neglect, physical and sexual abuse, separation from siblings who were not admitted to the care system, problems with poverty and disrupted education. The witnesses confirmed that the key aim of all staff at St Joseph's was to improve each girl's quality of life and provide each girl with the necessary skills to move out of care either back to their families or when they became adults.
10. Alongside the cultural evolution of St Joseph's, there was a similarly progressive approach to the physical evolution of the school itself. Of importance was the development of the living facilities from an earlier dormitory system to the development of four "houses". In fact, these were two blocks of two semi-detached dwellings within which were bedrooms, a kitchen, a living room, an open fire and bathrooms (SJM 1765). The Inquiry has heard through the evidence of Sister Canice Durkan that it was through the insistence of SR 240 that these living arrangements were constructed. The MoHA blueprint of the time advocated one block with a large central kitchen and sanitary area to be shared communally by all residing there. SR 240 insisted on the construction of 4 smaller house units to mirror, as far as possible, a family home.
11. There was also the construction of a "hostel" on the grounds, another residence designed to prepare the girls for independent living once they left St. Joseph's. The Inquiry has also heard of the purchase and rental of two properties in Belfast on the Glen Road and Falls Road, designed to extend this support for girls out into the community.

INTERNAL ORGANISATION

12. St Joseph's was run by SSL and funded entirely by the Government. It is not proposed to rehearse these arrangements here, given the detailed statement of Sister Canice Durkan at SJM 22716-7 and the prior evidence of Dr Hilary Harrison in Module 7 and his statement at RGL 4771. Management took the form of sisters and lay staff undertaking specific teaching and caring roles with staff working on rotas and living alongside girls in order to provide "24/7" care.
13. The school had a Board of Management, which met regularly. There are documents, which show meetings of the Board from at least 1950 and its membership required approval by the MoHA and NIO. A Board of Visitors was also in existence and operational from the 1950's.
14. Externally, St Joseph's was subject to inspection annually for the entirety of the period now under consideration. The schools' systems, record-keeping (including the Punishment Book, kept from 1883 until abandonment of corporal punishment in 1969) and facilities were therefore independently scrutinised throughout its life.
15. The Inquiry may regard it as significant that no substantive faults or failings in physical facilities, record-keeping, staff behaviour or (post 1965) training were identified under this scrutiny. We ask the Inquiry to note the consistent positive tone of the inspection reports.

4.0 LOCATION AND PREMISES

- 4.1 St Joseph's is located about 10 miles south west of Armagh City on the fringe of the village of Middletown. The main road from Armagh to Monaghan in the Irish Republic, which is about 12 miles from St Joseph's, passes through the village. The training school occupies a large open site and is surrounded by farmland. It stands unobtrusively behind a small wood and is approached by a winding shrub-lined drive. The grounds close to the buildings are set out in well maintained lawns with young trees planted here and there. The centre-piece of the site is the three-storeyed convent of the Sisters of St Louis which is finished in red brick and roofed with Bangor blue slates. The chapel with its distinctive rounded chancel is to the left of this building. To the rear are garages and outhouses an enclosed garden and a small private cemetery. A statue of St Joseph is situated on the lawn at the front of the convent.
- 4.2 Complimenting the convent and in juxtaposition to it is the main school/administrative block. In the past this contained dormitory accommodation for the residents but in recent years the interior was adapted to provide school, office and cooking/dining facilities. The main kitchen is on the ground floor and this provides the midday meal for the young persons. Modern kitchen equipment has recently been purchased and is awaiting installation. There is a serving hatch through to the dining-room which is bright and spacious. Tables and chairs are arranged so as to provide four place settings for each meal.
- 4.3 The main building also includes two classrooms, a domestic science block, a library and an art/craft/pottery centre. On the first floor there is office accommodation for the Director and the three senior staff and a lounge. The administrator's office is on the ground floor and this includes a small telephone exchange. A portacabin to the rear of the building provides an office for one of the administrative staff and for the psychologists who attend the school on a sessional basis.

The House Units

- 4.4 To the left of the convent are the two-storeyed houses in which the girls are accommodated. There are two blocks each comprising of two houses which are linked together by a connecting corridor at ground and first floor levels. The four houses are named as follows:-

HOUSE 1 - LA SALLETT
HOUSE 2 - LOURDES
HOUSE 3 - FATIMA
HOUSE 4 - BANNEUX

6. THE PREMISES

6.1 The 4 training schools represent a variety of architectural styles which reflect the current thinking in design of residential establishments covering the period from the early 1950s to the mid-1970s.

St Josephs

6.2 St Josephs is located about 10 miles south-west of Armagh City on the fringe of the village of Middletown. The school occupies a large open site and is surrounded by farm land. It stands unobtrusively behind a small wood and is approached by a winding tree-lined drive. The centre piece of the site is a 3-storey Convent of the Sisters of St Louis. A chapel, with a distinctive round chancel is to the left of this building.

6.3 Complementing the Convent and in a juxtaposition is the main school building/administrative block. In the past this building contained dormitory accommodation for the residents but in recent years the interior was adapted to provide school, office, cooking/dining facilities.

6.4 The young people are accommodated in 4, 2-storey house units. There are 2 blocks each containing 2 houses which are linked together by a connecting corridor at ground and first floor level. Each house is a self-contained unit for

3 girls, which can be extended to 9 or 10 in an emergency. All 4 units have the same architectural features and interior design. The units are bright, airy, clean, comfortable and tastefully decorated throughout. Each girl has her own room which has fitted wardrobes, cupboard space, vanity unit, dressing table and mirror, a chair and a bed.

- 6.5 A modern bungalow, situated on an elevated site, to the rear of the campus, is used to provide independence training for girls who are preparing to leave St Josephs. Known as the Hostel it can accommodate 3 girls and the amenities provided include a sitting room, dining room, reception room, bathroom and toilets. In addition there are 4 self-contained flats which can be used for a variety of reasons, staff sleeping in, emergency admissions following recall or at times of crisis in the young people's lives when a period of respite care is required.
- 6.6 A swimming pool and games hall complex is sited centrally between the hostel and the house units and is within easy reach of the school. The games hall is equipped for gymnastics and with a stage at one end, is suited for concerts, discos and other community functions.
- 6.7 The living accommodation for the young persons in St Josephs meets adequately the standards for space, size of bedrooms, set out in the Community Homes Design Guide.

Telephone :
CANNON 525/6

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL
MIDDLETOWN
Co. ARMAGH

17 September 1987

Mr Norman Douglas
Training Schools Branch
Northern Ireland Office
BELFAST

Dear Mr Douglas

RE CAPITAL EXPENDITURE - ASSESSMENT CENTRE

Thank you for your letter of the 24 August.

The Board has examined the needs of the school in the light of present usage, the pending legislation changes and the new problems emerging as a result of the increase in violence in Residential Establishments and the ever increasing number of seriously disturbed, suicidal adolescents who are coming into our care. It is the Board's opinion that it would be impossible at this moment to gauge the likely effects of new legislation on the numbers coming to St. Joseph's. It is their view that it would take some years after the enactment of legislation before any reliable trends could be monitored and or established.

The initial proposal to build a new Assessment Unit was based on the following identified needs:-

- (i) The usage of the present Unit, which over the past few years has been at a daily average occupancy of ten girls to eight beds.
- (ii) the design of the Unit which is ideally suited for six/seven girls makes no provision for such essential facilities as rooms for Case Conferences, family meetings, personal interviews for the girls with unit staff, social workers, psychologists. Due to lack of space these often take place in areas which are totally unsuited for confidential discussions.
- (iii) The other area of major need is the provision of a Small Unit which we call, loosely an Intensive Care Unit. This unit would be used as a temporary respite for a girl or girls who may be emotionally disturbed, suicidal or need safe space in a confidential setting to express grief, anger etc. We have a group of severely disturbed adolescents who indulge in self injury and self mutilation and who at times need a safe secure environment for short periods. We have girls who are the victims of sexual abuse and who require at times a waking staff member during the night to help them cope with their fears and nightmares.

There is, as you are aware, a growth in the incidents of Violence in all Residential establishments, and we have evidence of this in Middletown also.

1 A. Yes.

2 Q. One of then you mentioned was increases in staffing.

3 A. That's right, yes.

4 Q. I am not sure whether you will be able to answer this
5 question, but was there ever any problem getting
6 sufficient funding for increases like that as far as you
7 are aware?

8 A. Well, I've seen letters that SR240 wrote from time to
9 time explaining that circumstances were changing and
10 problems were more complex and there's more self-injury,
11 and "We need more staff and we need more money", and
12 I noticed -- I was looking at staff training
13 documentation recently, and I noticed that she was
14 asking for -- she was estimating how much it would be to
15 buy in -- there was a Dr Mary Magee --

16 Q. Uh-huh.

17 A. -- who came to give training on the campus and very
18 frequently -- I mean, I myself remember going to many
19 courses, and two or three staff members being with me,
20 going out to courses run by Social Services and things
21 like that. Does that answer ...?

22 Q. Yes. So there was no real problem? You got the
23 resources you needed, in other words?

24 A. Well, she was very good with money. She was a bit of
25 a financial wizard, as I said, and very economical with

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

From: Conor Hamill [REDACTED]
Sent: 17 June 2016 12:08
To: Smith, Christine (HIA Inquiry)
Subject: closure of St Joes

Hi Christine,

we've taken instructions, the issue wasn't canvassed in our evidence given the time period you were concerned with.

in any event, i am instructed that the reasons were:

1. The complexities of implementing the changes brought in by the Children's Order 1995 and
- 2) the age profile of the sisters managing St Joseph's was increasing and there were no appropriately qualified sisters available to replace them.

I hope this assists.

regards

Conor Hamill BL

Congregation decided to close the boarding school and to concentrate their efforts on the Industrial School/Orphanage. In 1950, the Ministry of Home Affairs invited St Joseph's to become a training school within the terms of the Children and Young Persons Act (NI) 1950. St Joseph's became a training school in 1952 and at this time the orphanage closed. Children who had been admitted to the orphanage prior to 1952 remained there until adulthood or discharge. St Joseph's went through a period of rapid reorganisation and development in the late 1960s and early 1970s which involved a major redevelopment of its site and facilities. Further major change took place with the introduction of the Children's Order in 1995. At this time St Joseph's became known as St Joseph's Adolescent Centre with separate units for care and juvenile justice. St Joseph's closed in 2000.

How many individuals spent time in St Joseph's between 1922 and 1995?

3. The Congregation's admission records for St Joseph's which date back to 1883 confirm that approximately 1500 girls spent time in St Joseph's between 1922 and 1995.

On what basis were children admitted to St Joseph's between 1922 and 1995?

4. In the earliest days of the industrial school/ orphanage, Catholic girls were admitted who were either destitute orphans or in some other way in need of care and protection. Children would have been brought by clergy or admitted following reference from the Petty Sessions courts throughout Northern Ireland.
5. From the creation of the training school in 1952, Catholic girls were admitted who were subject to Training School Orders or Place of Safety Orders on the grounds that the Court was satisfied that they should be placed in St Joseph's for care, protection and control reasons or for non- school attendance. The vast majority of girls we admitted had complex emotional needs and behavioural problems. Short and longer

Rule 14(c) The Board of Management shall ensure that fire drills are carried out at regular intervals so that staff and pupils are well versed in the procedure for saving life in case of fire.

- 6.4 Records of fire drills start in October 1992 following the installation of a new sophisticated fire alarm system. Initially it had a number of teething problems and there were a number of false alarms. They have declined in number but the records show that there were three false alarms during 1994 and there was another in the early hours of the morning during the inspection. It meant that the senior staff on duty had to get up in the early hours of the morning to check that nothing was amiss in the school block.
- 6.5 The record of fire drills shows that in addition to the three false alarms mentioned above the alarm set off on three occasions by smoke from cooking in the house units. There were only three evacuations as a result of drills and only one of them was in House 1. The Inspector recognises the difficulties that can be created by fire drills among a group of unsettled young people but given the high "turnover" of young people in an assessment unit he suggests that there is a particular need for more regular drills in House 1.

Rule 19(2) requires the Manager to "keep a Register of Admissions and Discharges, licences, revocations of licences, recalls, releases and discharges; a log book in which shall be entered every event of importance connected with the school; a daily register of the presence or absence of each boy or girl; and a punishment book..."

- 6.6 Admission/ Discharge Register. St Joseph's has two registers one of which dates back to the opening of the school in the early 1950s and a newer one that replaced it when it was full. The first one fully complied with the requirements of the regulations but the current one is only designed to record admissions and there is no specific provision for recording licences, discharges etc. There is, however, ample space in the section headed "Family Details" and it is recommended that it should be used to record this information.
- 6.7 A synopsis of the number of admissions and other information in the register is also kept. It provides interesting information on the changing pattern of admissions to the school over the years. In the 1950s and 60s the number of admissions varied between 4 and 13 per annum. Since then it has risen steadily and during the last decade the average number has been around twenty.
- 6.8 Short term admissions on remands and Place of Safety Orders are recorded separately in a hard covered exercise book. There have been between 19 and 29 each year over the last decade. This arrangement of keeping a separate record of short term admissions does not appear to comply strictly with the requirements of the rules which specify "a" register for "all" admissions. However, the Inspector was told that it is necessary because girls cannot be

1 Q. You had disclosed that in a previous children's home.

2 A. Yes, in Orana House. The nuns in Orana House and the
3 Social Services were very aware of the extent of the
4 abuse, but it wasn't passed on.

5 Q. Now if we can go back then to St. Joseph's, Middletown,
6 you were back in St. Joseph's ultimately from
7 22nd August 1994 to 3rd November 1994. You talk about
8 that in paragraphs 21 to 25 of your witness statement at
9 034. You say that -- you say:

10 "Children who had committed criminal offences were
11 sent to Middletown, so I do not understand why I was
12 sent there."

13 We were discussing this, HIA198, and I know that you
14 have received your Social Services' material and you
15 have spent years going through it.

16 A. Yes.

17 Q. But it is clear from the material that the Inquiry has
18 seen that most girls in St. Joseph's were referred there
19 by Social Services on a Place of Safety Order, because
20 either their parents or the children's home in which
21 they were resident were unable to cope with their
22 behaviours --

23 A. Uh-huh.

24 Q. -- or because they were in need of care and protection
25 because of their risk-taking behaviour. You fell into

4. THE CHILDREN AND YOUNG PEOPLE

- 4.1 On the days of the inspection there were 31 girls on the campus of the school. Eight of them were living in House 1, the assessment unit, and were subject to Place of Safety Orders or interim orders for detention. The other 23 girls were all subject to Training School Orders. Four of them were in House 2, nine in House 3, seven in House 4 and three in the Hostel. All these children and young people, who were between 13 and 16 years of age had been placed in the training school for care, protection and control reasons or, in the cases of four of them, for non-school attendance. One offender had been returned home early in November.
- 4.2 The geographical spread of the home areas of the girls was fairly even. Thirteen of them came from the Eastern Health and Social Services Board area, four from the Northern Board area and seven from each of the Southern and Western Boards. There does, however, appear to be a limited number of Board and voluntary children's homes referring children to St. Joseph's. Twelve of the girls were admitted directly from their own homes and one from a foster home. The remaining 18 came from 7 children's homes. There were 5 from St Joseph's children's home and 2 from Willowfield, both in Belfast; 2 from Coneywarren, 2 from Harberton House and 3 from Fort James, all in the Western Board and 3 from Bocombra and one from Orana in the Southern Board.
- 4.3 During the inspection the Inspector was told of a new tendency for girls to appeal against Training School Orders often on the advice of their solicitors although they are quite content to remain in the school. The courts are increasingly dealing with these appeals by adjourning the cases for several months and allowing the girls to go home on trial to see how they get on. At the time of the inspection there were five girls in this situation. There were also ten girls on extended leave. There were another ten girls whose training school orders have expired but were receiving significant help and support from the staff.
- 4.4 The Inspector met most of the girls either during breaks in the school day or during the evenings of his visit. They all appeared relaxed and content and made no complaints about their treatment. In fact, while in his presence they appeared to be a remarkably quiet group of teenagers. There was little noise and they presented few signs of the disturbed behaviour that the records show they can display.

1 advance, you know. They were very helpful in guiding
2 the staff as well.

3 Q. Was the psychologist there all day or was it just for
4 a morning, or an afternoon, or an hour or what?

5 A. They came in the morning. They came in the morning and
6 they stayed until 4 o'clock I suppose or 5.00. I don't
7 really remember. I know they came in the morning.
8 I think they came around 9.00 or 9.30, yes, and they
9 stayed all day, yes.

10 Q. HIA198's particular case raises a more general question
11 perhaps, because it may paint the background. The
12 impression one gets from the papers is that she came to
13 St. Joseph's because she had had a very troubled history
14 and experience in other homes and it was felt by those
15 responsible for her care that really the only place she
16 could safely go, since other institutions weren't
17 appropriate, was St. Joseph's.

18 A. Uh-huh.

19 Q. One gets a feeling perhaps that the staff at
20 St. Joseph's weren't very keen that that should happen.

21 Was there any sense -- not just with her but with
22 others -- that it was seen as or being used as a place
23 of last resort for somebody with very intractable
24 behavioural problems?

25 A. Well, I don't want to sound flippant, but I used to say

1 myself, "When all else failed, try Middletown".

2 Q. Well, that in a sense answers the question. Was it
3 because there wasn't anywhere else that it seemed that
4 girls with a particularly troubled background might be
5 brought to Middletown?

6 A. Well, I thought it was because we were good at dealing
7 with girls with troubled backgrounds.

8 Q. To put the question in another way, did it ever occur to
9 you or was it ever discussed whether there was an unmet
10 need in the province for an institution that might deal
11 only with, let's say, four or five very troubled girls,
12 but there wasn't one, so they tended to come to
13 Middletown?

14 A. Well, we did often -- I mean, there were some cases
15 certainly where we would have said an adolescent
16 psychiatric unit was needed, and there was one in the
17 '80s I think, but it seemed it was very difficult to get
18 in, and then it didn't -- you know, it was only always
19 a temporary kind of intervention.

20 Q. Was that Lissie perhaps?

21 A. No, no, no. It was in Belfast. There was a guy called
22 .

23 Q. Ah, yes. The Children's Centre in College Gardens?

24 A. Yes. I think that was, yes.

25 Q. Yes. It was always very much in demand --

professional practice within the schools⁴.

1922 to 1954

- 2.2 HIAI evidence now available to the Department shows that inspections of Middletown Industrial School took place, at least annually between the years 1922-1954⁵. Indeed, Dr Simpson, who seems to have been appointed in or around 1949 as an Assistant Inspector of Industrial Schools, suggested that at least 4 'visits' a year should be made to the schools⁶ and this was recommended for approval by MoHA⁷. It is also noted that some annual inspection reports in the 1950s referred to visits made earlier in the year by the inspectors, Dr Simpson and Miss Forrest⁸. Reports on the school (which in 1950 became a training school under the provisions of the Children and Young Persons Act (NI) 1950 [the 1950 Act]) were consistently positive with evidence of inspectors and MoHA assiduously following up concerns about individual children⁹. The inspectors also on occasions visited children who had been boarded out from the school to a family¹⁰. Even issues which tended to be minor in nature were nonetheless followed up by MoHA, for example the progress of minor repairs and decorative work and the fitting of towel rails¹¹.

1954 to the early 1970s

- 2.3 The MOHA file containing the annual inspection reports from 1922 was closed in 1954¹². A continuation file has not been found in the HIAI evidence. It is not unreasonable to assume, however, that a similarly consistent pattern of inspection would have continued for the remainder of the 1950s and into the early 1970s, particularly as Dr Simpson and Miss Forrest continued in post during this period¹³ and were joined by the mid 1950s by a further children's inspector, namely, Miss Wright who also appears to have carried out joint

⁴ The January 2016 statement paragraph 2.4

⁵ SJM-1484 (1922); SJM-1483 (1923); SJM-1482 (1924); 1925 (Inspectors' signatures found in punishment book SJM-27581); SJM-1488 (1926); SJM-1478 (1927); SJM-1461 (1928); SJM-1459 (1929); SJM-1451 (1930); SJM-1434 (1931); SJM-1432(1939); SJM-1434 (1933); SJM-1432 (1934); SJM-1426 (1935); SJM-1424 (1936); SJM- 1414(1937); SJM-1392 (1938); SJM-1391 (1939); SJM-1409 (1940); SJM-1387 (1941); SJM-1412 (1942); SJM- 1381(1943); SJM-1379 (1944); SJM-1359 (1945); SJM-1358 (1946); SJM-1324 and 1360 (1947); SJM-1327 (1948); SJM-1313 (1949); SJM-1297 (1950); SJM-1291(1951); SJM-1278 (1952); SJM-1274 (1953); SJM-1272 (1954)

⁶ SJM-1313

⁷ SJM-1312

⁸ e.g. SJM-1282, SJM-1274 and SJM-1289

⁹ e.g. SJM-16463; SJM-1323

¹⁰ SJM-1300

¹¹ SJM 1289

¹² SJM-1263

¹³ Dr Simpson was in post until at least 1968 and Miss Forrest until the mid 1970s.

ST. JOSEPH'S INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL FOR GIRLS,

MIDDLETOWN, CO. ARMAGH.

The Annual Inspection of this School was made on the 13th December, 1926.

On that date there were 43 girls present namely, 40 under detention - of whom 5 were under six years of age - and 3 who have been admitted pending committal. There were no children out on licence.

During the past year there were 14 admissions and 6 discharges.

The health of the children has been very good, only a few trivial illnesses having occurred. The Medical Officer - Dr. Leonard - made 15 visits during the year. The children appear to be well nourished, are comfortably and neatly clothed, and are apparently contented and diligent.

The premises are kept in good condition and in good repair, and the equipment is satisfactory. The lavatory accommodation was increased and four new porcelain hand basins supplied with both hot and cold water, were installed. The dormitories seem to be rather cold in winter, but the bedding and bed-clothes were good and ample. The general character and tone of the institution appeared to be well maintained.

The conduct of the children has been good: breaches of discipline have been few and the punishments mild.

The prescribed books were well kept.

(SD) J. McCloy.

Inspector.

14th December, 1926.

/SB

St. Joseph's Industrial (Girls')
School, Middletown.

MEMORANDUM OF INSPECTION, 4th November, 1931.

The Annual Inspection of this School was made yesterday, when 36 children were present, three of these being under six years of age. There were also five children of one family in residence pending committal, two of whom were under six years of age. Since the beginning of the year there have been seven admissions, six discharges and no deaths.

The School continues to be conducted with the usual excellence. The buildings and their equipment are maintained in first-class order. The upper school-room and the hallway and staircase have been redecorated. New tables have been put in the kitchen. Arrangements for the installation of control heating have been completed and the work commenced.

The children, who commingle during literary instruction with the day pupils of the Public Elementary School, continue to show all the evidences of the care which has hitherto been observed, and their appearance, deportment and proficiency are very good. They have all been free from sickness during the past year. Their conduct has been good and very little punishment has been necessary.

The required books are well kept.

J. McCloy.

Assistant Inspector of Reformatory
and Industrial Schools.

5th November, 1931.

Ministry of Home Affairs,
Stormont,
BELFAST.

P.I. 4612.

ST JOSEPH'S INDUSTRIAL AND REFORMATORY SCHOOL,
MIDDLETOWN, CO. ARMAGH.

The annual inspection of this School was made on the 20th December, 1933. On that day there were 56 Industrial School and 5 Reformatory girls in residence; 6 of the former being under six years of age, and there were no voluntary cases.

During the past year 3 Industrial School and 1 Reformatory girls were admitted; 15 Industrial School and 4 Reformatory girls were transferred from the Whiteabbey School when this was closed, and 4 Industrial School girls were discharged. No girls are out on licence. As the authorized limit of accommodation is fixed at 50 this figure will have to be revised or overcrowding will be suggested by the number of girls at present in residence. I suggest that the figure be raised to 70. A detailed description of the nature of the accommodation in the School was furnished to the Ministry a few days ago by the Manager of the School, so a recapitulation here is uncalled for.

The premises and their equipment continue to be very satisfactorily maintained. About two dozen new beds and bedding have been provided. Two of the ablution rooms are at present undergoing thorough remodelling and refitting, fixed porcelain basins supplied with hot and cold water being provided. Cleanliness, tidiness and order are well observed throughout.

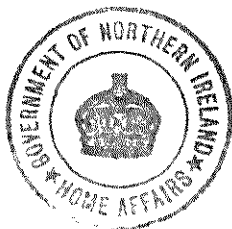
The children continue to be very well cared for in all respects. Their proficiency in subjects outside the ordinary school programme, such as music, dancing, and the performance of small plays, is most creditable. The general tone of the school is excellent, and a spirit of cheerfulness is associated with industry.

The health of the children throughout the past year has been very good, only a very few cases of trifling illness having occurred. One or two of the girls appear to have a tendency to chilblains.

The conduct of the children has been very good.

The books are well kept.

J. McCLOY



Assistant Inspector of Reformatory and
Industrial Schools, Northern Ireland.

21st December, 1933.

Ministry of Home Affairs,
Stormont,
Belfast.

St. Joseph's Reformatory and Industrial
School, Middletown, Co. Armagh.

MEMORANDUM OF INSPECTION - 23rd October, 1944.

(1) An inspection was made of this School on 23rd October, 1944. On that day there were in residence 30 Industrial and 7 Reformatory girls.

(2) Since last inspection on 20th December, 1943, 4 Industrial girls were admitted. Four Industrial girls and one Reformatory girl were discharged from the School to take up positions in the general community.

(3) The girls were free from any form of serious illness during the year. There were no cases of infectious disease.

(4) At the time of visit most of the girls were receiving instruction in educational subjects in the different class rooms of the School. The children were all looking in very good health. They appeared to be very happy and cheerful and were most willing to display their ability in the subjects taught. They sang, recited and danced with skill and with an obvious air of pleasure. The relationship between the girls and their teachers was clearly a most amicable one.

(5) Instruction in handicrafts, especially fancy needlework and bag making, has been recently introduced for the older girls. Judging from the high standard of the work already done, the ability of the girls is highly commendable. One Industrial girl recently gained a prize at a local exhibition for work which she had submitted. A number of the girls are now receiving instruction in pianoforte playing and here again talent in this subject amongst the girls has been discovered.

(6) As well as instruction in cultural subjects the girls are trained in household duties such as general cleaning, bed-making, cooking and kitchen routine and laundry work. Sewing and dress-making is also taught. Indeed much thought and labour is put into the designing and making of the girls' garments by the sewing sister, so that the girls can be neatly and tastefully dressed. Most of the sewing is done by the girls under the supervision of the sewing sister. Very attractive dancing frocks, which had been made, were

(7) The class rooms were well lighted, comfortable and well equipped. The dormitories were bright, airy and clean.

/beds

(7) beds and bedding were in good condition. The old mattresses are gradually being replaced by new ones teased and made up by the girls. The ablution rooms and sanitary annexes were in a clean state.

(8) The girls refectory has been repainted and a new floor is being laid in it. A wireless set has been installed in the refectory and it is very popular.

(9) The dietary scale though simple is ample. Much of the food consumed is produced on the school farm. Fruit is provided. Milk under the Milk for School Children Scheme is only delivered to the School for the day pupils attending. Steps should be taken to have milk delivered for all the girls in the School under the Scheme as they are eligible for such milk

(10) The behaviour of the girls has been satisfactory. The punishment book contained a few entries and these were for minor breaches of discipline punished by withdrawal of special privileges.

11 The medical officer and dentist attend regularly at the School.

(12) The various statutory books were found written up to date.

(13) Two of the external fire escapes have been completed and the third one is in the course of construction.

(14) The general atmosphere in this School is one which merits praise. The teaching and training which the girls receive in the School are wide in scope and should greatly assist them when they come to take up their place as citizens in the general community. The staff of the School is doing excellent work in promoting the healthy development, both mental and physical, of the girls.

(Sgd.) T.W.H. WEIR

Assistant Inspector of
Reformatory & Industrial Schools, N.I.
Ministry of Home Affairs,
Stormont,
BELFAST.

and I feel that this is a matter which requires urgent consideration.

The statutory books are kept up to date, but I note that the Medical Officer, although he has visited quarterly, has only recorded the visit made in October.

The punishment book records only very minor punishments for small breaches of discipline and decorum.

The Sister in charge and her staff are entirely devoted to the children in their care and it is pleasant to observe the happy relations existing between staff and pupils.

(Sgd.) Florence Harrison
December 12, 1947.

One formed a very good impression of conditions in this School. The relationship between the staff and children appeared to be on a very good footing and the standard of training, guidance and care given the children was designed to fit, as well as possible, the children for a useful life in the community.

T. G. H. Genl.

Assistant Inspector
Industrial and Reformatory Schools (N.I.)

Ministry of Home Affairs
St. Columba

10th January, 1949.

W/RMP

Ordinary Report
Reformatory
St. Columba

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN.

This school was inspected on 20th November, 1951. On that date there were 33 girls in the Training School, 22 junior and 11 senior. Earlier in the year there had been some absconding by four of the girls, but this appears to have happened under the influence of a recently-admitted girl of vagrant type who now seems to have settled down.

General Health of the Pupils:

The general health of the girls was well maintained during the year and there were no serious outbreaks of illness. One girl, [redacted] SJM 27 [redacted] was admitted to Crawfordsburn Hospital on 24th May, 1951, suffering from Tuberculous Glands. She was discharged to St. Joseph's School on 9th November, 1951. The general medical arrangements remain as described in last year's report. As the medical record cards were not seen on the day of the inspection a further visit was made on 8th March. Unfortunately, the School Medical Officer had taken the record cards home for the purpose of writing up the new medical record cards which have recently been obtained. All the children seen looked healthy, sturdy and well-cared for.

Buildings and Equipment:

All parts of the premises are as always clean, tidy and comfortable. Some small improvements have been made, such as the provision of extra presses and cupboards. The new bathroom has been completed; with the exception of the towel-rails, and is most useful. The re-wiring of the school premises has not started, but we were told it should begin soon. This means that the re-equipment of the laundry has not started either, so that the laundry work is still being done under difficulties, especially the drying of the clothes which has to be done by makeshift methods quite unsuitable for large quantities. Repairs to the drive and concrete area beside the school buildings have not yet started. Some minor repairs and decorative work are needed in the hall and stairs and landings leading to the dormitories. With these exceptions all is maintained in good order. The dormitories and dining-room make a particularly cheerful impression.

Diet:

We saw a satisfying meal being prepared in the kitchen. The appearance of the girls is the best recommendation for their diet!

Statutory Books:

The statutory books were inspected and found to be up-to-date. The punishment book records only minor infringements of discipline except for the absconders, who are indeed exceptional.

General:

The usual happy atmosphere prevailed, with everyone going about their tasks cheerfully and quietly. The girls' attitude to the staff and to visitors is pleasant and it is obvious that good relationships exist. The attitude of the staff to the girls shows itself too in the way they speak of them, affectionate, concerned and understanding.

We also visited a child who is boarded-out from the School, SJM 78 [redacted] and found her to be very well cared for in an extremely happy home where she is completely one of the family. She attends the Convent Primary School.

Kathleen B. Faneor

Norman J. Simpson

Phone 203



JOSEPH'S SCHOOL,
MIDDLETOWN,
Co. Armagh.

3rd April, 1952.

Sir,

We thank you for the report of Miss K.B. Forrest and Dr. N.J.Y. Simpson received on the 29th March. The towel rails have been put into the new bathroom. The repairs to the hall, stairs and landings leading to the dormitories are now in progress. The electric light is completed and the workmen are now working in the laundry. The repairs to the concrete area have been completed.

Yours respectfully,

M. C. Hynes.
Manager.

The Secretary,
Ministry of Home Affairs
STORMONT,
Belfast.

Miss W. J. Hynes
D/PC.

Miss Forrest ✓ *See ref 16/4/52* *no sub plan*
Dr. Simpson ✓ *15/4/52* *W. J. Hynes*
P.C. *To see 8/16*
52.

Statutory Books.

Statutory Books were inspected and found to be up-to-date. Medical and Dental Register, Punishment Book, Discharge Book and Senior and Junior Pupils Register were inspected. The Punishment Records only show minor punishments for small breaches of discipline. The Sister in charge and her staff are obviously devoted to the children in their care and there is a happy relationship between staff and children. All the children looked happy and contented. All were well dressed and clean. Footwear was satisfactory. In addition to formal education in the school children are taught dancing, music, sewing and dressmaking as well as housekeeping routine. The end of term school concert was held on the day of our visit and we were impressed by the high standard of singing, dancing and dramatics. In general, an excellent impression of conditions in this school was formed.

During the summer Miss Forest visited the children at Glenariff where an enjoyable fortnight was spent on holiday.

Norman J. Simpson 4-1-51
Rathlin B. Forest 4-1-51

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN.

Extracts from Report by Miss Forrest and Dr. Simpson
following their inspection on 28th November, 1951.

General Health of the Pupils:

The general health of the girls was well maintained during the year and there were no serious outbreaks of illness. One girl, [redacted] SJM 27 was admitted to Crawfordsburn Hospital on 24th May, 1951, suffering from Tuberculous Glands. She was discharged to St. Joseph's School on 9th November, 1951. The general medical arrangements remain as described in last year's report. As the medical record cards were not seen on the day of the inspection a further visit was made on 8th March. Unfortunately, the School Medical Officer had taken the record cards home for the purpose of writing up the new medical record cards which have recently been obtained. All the children seen looked healthy, sturdy and well cared for.

girl died
18/1/52
in Bradford
Hospital.
Dr.
r/b

Buildings and Equipment:

All parts of the premises are as always clean, tidy and comfortable. Some small improvements have been made, such as the provision of extra presses and cupboards. The new bathroom has been completed; with the exception of the towel rails, and is most useful. The re-wiring of the school premises has not started, but we were told it should begin soon. This means that the re-equipment of the laundry has not started either, so that the laundry work is still being done under difficulties, especially the drying of the clothes which has to be done by makeshift methods quite unsuitable for large quantities. Repairs to the drive and concrete area beside the school buildings have not yet started. Some minor repairs and decorative work are needed in the hall and stairs and landings leading to the dormitories. With these exceptions all is maintained in good order. The dormitories and dining-room make a particularly cheerful impression.

Diet:

We saw a satisfying meal being prepared in the kitchen. The appearance of the girls is the best recommendation for their diet.

Statutory Books:

The statutory books were inspected and found to be up to date. The punishment book records only minor infringements of discipline except for the absconders, who are indeed exceptional.

General:

The usual happy atmosphere prevailed, with everyone going about their tasks cheerfully and quietly. The girls' attitude to the staff and to visitors is pleasant and it is obvious that good relationships exist. The attitude of the staff to the girls shows itself too in the way they speak of them, affectionate, concerned and understanding.

Earlier in the year there had been some absconding by four of the girls, but this appears to have happened under the influence of a recently-admitted girl of vagrant type who now seems to have settled down.

We also visited a child who is boarded out from the School, [redacted] SJM 78, and found her to be very well cared for in an extremely happy home where she is completely one of the family. She attends the Convent Primary School.

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN1. General Health

All the children seen looked well and happy. There has been no outbreak of infectious illness. The new Medical Record cards are now in use.

2. Buildings and Equipment

The premises were in good order throughout. Some painting has been done on the hall and stairways, so that the whole place looks very bright and clean. The laundry facilities have been much improved, especially for drying the clothes. The concrete area and drive have been repaired.

3. Activities

We have been very impressed on our visits by the high standards reached in all departments, both in work and leisure activities. The bigger girls are not kept too long at one job, changing from kitchen in the morning to sewing-room in the afternoon, for example. The work in music, dancing etc. is excellent. Miss Forrest was particularly impressed on an earlier visit by the percussion band, which was conducted by an older girl, and in which even the youngest child (a 4-year old voluntary girl) could join, and did, with obvious enjoyment.

4. After-care

The new system of after-care by the school Welfare Officer appears to be working well, and the staff are well satisfied with the results. The school Welfare Officer is able to visit the girls regularly and also to visit the School so as to get to know her future charges.

5. General

The standards of care and training in this School remain excellent. It is evident that all the Sisters have the children's interests very much at heart. The punishment book shows a very occasional record of 2 slaps or 4 slaps, but mainly punishment is by deprivation of privileges. In general the impression is one of firmness and kindness in the right proportions.

inspections of St Joseph's with Dr Simpson¹⁴.

- 2.4 References in records retained by St Joseph's during this period, which include the visitors' book, the daily diary; the minute book and the punishment book show that MoHA inspectors were in the school in December 1955; November 1956; November 1957; December 1958; November 1959; December 1960; December 1962; May 1963; March and July 1964; February and March 1965; March and June 1966; June 1967; and April 1968, the note from the 28th April 1968 reading:

*"Miss Forrest and Dr Simpson came and did inspection of the school today. 11.20 am-4.30 pm"*¹⁵.

References to Miss Forrest and other MoHA officials during 1971-1973 are also made in relation to discussions with the school about proposed new building plans¹⁶.

- 2.5 Whilst the visits of MoHA inspectors were not always referred to as inspections, the Department believes that the nature of the contacts suggest a MoHA policy of annual inspection of St Joseph's which probably also extended to each of the other training schools and was not confined to a strict interpretation of the role. It is noted, for example, that Miss Forrest visited the St Joseph's children on holiday in Glenariff¹⁷ and she was involved in both bringing a child who had absconded back to the school¹⁸ and providing advice to a Welfare Authority on bringing a St Joseph's resident back from London who had been abducted from her place of employment¹⁹.
- 2.6 Three former residents who were in St Joseph's at various times between the years 1949 to 1970 have also provided statements to the HIAI in which they recall visits by persons understood by them to be inspectors, officials or "the Ministry", annually or every other year²⁰. There are also some indications in the statements that inspectors spoke to the girls and although this was not done privately, it shows that there was some level of direct engagement with the children.

Early 1970s to 1987 and from 1987 onwards

¹⁴ SJM-25259

¹⁵ SJM-26722

¹⁶ SJM-23195; SJM-23209; SJM-23223

¹⁷ SJM-1302

¹⁸ SJM-26651

¹⁹ SJM-10076

²⁰ HIA 161 page 001 paragraphs 12 and 13; HIA 203 page 053 paragraph 13; HIA 178 page 332 paragraph 11.

PRIVATE

14. I went to school every weekday from the ages of 4 until I left at 16 but I didn't learn anything. The teachers I remember were SR250 and SR249 SR249. There were no lay teachers at the school. Both these nuns beat me when I couldn't pronounce my words. I kept getting my letters and my words confused, for example, instead of "God bless you", I wrote "God blast you". They beat me for that mistake but I can't remember who beat me. I still can't read or write. The nuns did not help me to learn. They just left me at the back of the classroom. We were taught with the children from the town and although the nuns beat us, they did not beat those children.
15. I vaguely remember being ill and being left by myself in bed in my dormitory. I don't remember being taken to a doctor or getting any medicine on this occasion. I don't remember a nurse in the convent or a sick bay. I broke my arm once when was about 15. I was at school and I was leaning back in my chair and fell over. The nuns did take me to hospital in [REDACTED] and I was there for one ~~or two~~ days. *My arm was set in plaster of paris.* HIA 249
16. The nuns took us on holiday every year to [REDACTED]. We would go there as a group. I also remember having to cook and clean while we were there.
17. On one occasion Inspectors from Stormont came to look around the convent. I was about 9 or 10. They asked me 'Who made the Hail Mary?' I told them 'St Joseph'. I was beaten for saying this after they left. I remember that day I was waiting with the other girls in the refectory near a table where some meals were laid out. We ate them as we thought this food was for us but it was for the nuns. We got a terrible beating because of this but at least we did not go to bed hungry that day. We didn't get stars/marks for good behaviour for a while after that.
18. My father visited us at least every month for the whole time I was in the convent. He came on his bicycle from [REDACTED] to Armagh. My mother, my [REDACTED] and my half sister, [REDACTED] came to visit as well from time to time. We were not allowed to say hello or hug our visitors. We were taken in one at a time to see my parents; the nuns did not allow us to spend time

HIA 249

1 Q. -- but you were there from August to September 1949.

2 You would at that stage have been very young indeed,
3 HIA178.

4 A. I don't remember.

5 Q. You don't have any memory of that?

6 A. No, I don't remember.

7 Q. But what we do know is that there are inspection reports
8 from the Ministry of Home Affairs inspectors. You
9 feature in those reports. I'm just going to look at
10 a couple of them, if I may. 22963, please. Actually
11 when we were talking earlier, you told me, HIA178, that
12 you remember people coming to visit St. Joseph's to
13 carry out inspections.

14 A. That's right, yes.

15 Q. This is from December 1950. Again at this stage in time
16 you would have been very young and it just says there,
17 if you see in the middle of that second paragraph -- you
18 might not be able to read this, because the writing is
19 a bit smaller. Just maybe perhaps if we could just
20 enlarge that slightly for her.

21 A. Uh-huh.

22 Q. It just says -- about five lines down. Yes, from there.

23 Yes. It just says there:

24 "We also saw HIA178, who is suffering from

25 as the result

PRIVATE

hugs but were pulled away. The following year the boys were sent back to [REDACTED] the day before we arrived so we had no communication with them. When we wrote to them during the year our letters were never sent. After I left care I went to visit my brothers but I was not allowed in. The nuns in St Joseph's would not let us see my sister as she had had a baby out of wedlock. They called her "unholy" and a "fallen woman". She came to see us once and they wouldn't let her in the door. She was waiting outside and if we hadn't seen her by chance and went over to her she would have been sent away without seeing us.

13. When someone official was coming to visit they gave you new bedding so we looked well provided for but once they left it was taken away and put back in the store room. We were told to be on our best behaviour and not to speak unless we were spoken to and when answering a question were told to be careful what we said.
14. They did not teach us anything about life or what to expect when you left. I was not even told when I was going to be leaving. I was playing a netball match one day and a woman called SJM44 [REDACTED] came and took me from the match. She brought me back to the home and gave me a suitcase packed with old fashioned clothes. I was not given the opportunity to say goodbye to my sister and was put in a car and taken to my great-great aunt's house. I had never met this relative before and I was left there with no explanation and no money. My great aunt and her family also lived in the house and they did not want me there. I could hear her arguing with her husband about me so I left and went to find my sister DL219 [REDACTED]
15. I stayed with DL219 [REDACTED] for a while but she lived in a bedsit with her partner and two children so it was very crowded. I was on the street again and was taken to [REDACTED] prison for 3 months. SR237 [REDACTED] took me out of [REDACTED] prison and brought me to the Santa Maria hostel.

4. The main function of the Inspectorate was to advise NI Government Departments in the fields of social policy and planning and the provision of social work services.
5. The Chief Inspector was the chief professional adviser to Ministers and Departments on personal social services and social work, and advised on related matters of social policy.
6. In this position I helped to formulate and carry out Departmental policy, contributed to the overall governance of the Department and the conduct of its business, in particular strategic planning and the development of legislation. In addition, I represented the Department on social work, social service and related policy issues; facilitated communication and consultation with service, professional and academic interests, and maintained links with other Government Departments in the United Kingdom and the Republic of Ireland.

Agreements between DHSS (SSI) and NIO

7. Prior to the establishment of the DHSS and the Social Work Advisory Group (SWAG) in 1972 Training Schools were inspected/visited by the two professional staff employed by the Ministry of Home Affairs (MoHA). These staff transferred to the SWAG and continued to visit the Training Schools and provide reports to the NIO. I am not aware that any formal agreement was drawn up to cover this arrangement.

Frequency of Inspections

8. From 1972 the approach to inspections of Training Schools was probably similar to that which applied to voluntary children's' homes. This meant that visits were informal and infrequent and did not result in the production of detailed reports.

**STATEMENT OF CHARLES WESLEY DONNELL, RETIRED SOCIAL SERVICES
INSPECTOR, TO THE HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE INQUIRY**

MODULE 7 TRAINING SCHOOLS

1. I completed my professional social work training in 1969 obtaining a Certificate in Social Work and was posted to Ballymoney. In December of that year I was appointed Senior Social Worker and was placed in charge of the Ballycastle Social Work Team. In 1971 I was appointed Assistant Principal Social Worker (Residential Care Services) attached to County Hall, Ballymena. During my tenure in North Antrim I attended a management course at the National Institute for Social Work Training in London.
2. I was appointed to the Social Work Advisory Group (SWAG), DHSS in March 1973. Due to the delay in implementing the establishment of the Health and Social Services Boards, an agreement was reached between the DHSS and my former employer, the Antrim County Welfare Committee, that I and several other colleagues would continue part time in my previous post as an Assistant Principal Social Worker (Residential Services). This part time arrangement continued until the Boards became fully operational, with new staff appointments, in September 1973.
3. My initial brief with SWAG was policy and practice in relation to day care services for the Under 5s, community work and liaison with voluntary organisations. In relation to the Under 5s brief, I was a member of a resource group of Social Work Service Officers which met regularly at the Department of Health and Social Security, Alexander Fleming House, London.
4. In 1975/76 there was a major reorganisation within SWAG. The two former Ministry of Home Affairs Inspectors, Miss Mabel Hill and Miss Kay Forest became responsible, as part of a group of advisors for dealing with voluntary and statutory children's homes. I was seconded to the Northern Ireland Office, albeit I was managed by SWAG, to provide professional social work advice to that Department in relation to training schools and miscellaneous services in other parts of the Criminal Justice system, for example probation, social work departments in prisons and voluntary organisations such as Extern and the Northern Ireland Association for the Care and Resettlement of Offenders.
5. The duties in relation to the training schools included all aspects of professional social work practice, staff appointments, advice on qualifications and salary placings. From time to time I acted as an independent Assessor on Senior Social Work Appointments.

6. Within the training schools all of the teaching staff had professional qualifications in education. Many of the care staff may have had some relevant experience and qualifications in, for example, youth work. However, it was accepted by the NIO and senior staff in the schools that it would be desirable for care staff to obtain professional qualifications in residential social work. It was my role to encourage training for care staff through full and part time courses. I felt like I was pushing on an open door encouraging both the training schools to have their staff qualified and the NIO to fund this training. Over a period of years many staff obtained relevant qualifications. Some of the schools had a majority of male staff. It had been accepted that the presence of female staff could bring some degree of normalisation to the residential experience for young people. I encouraged the adoption of a more balanced gender approach to staffing.
7. Other duties were carried out in relation to various elements within the Criminal Justice System that had a social work component. For example, contact with the Probation Service and Prison Welfare Departments within Her Majesty's Prisons at Maze, Crumlin Road and Armagh Women's Prison.
8. There was no fixed timetable for my visits to the training schools - I probably visited them approximately once a month. From time to time more frequent visits were necessary, usually at the request of the Principals if some matter of urgency emerged. The Principals would have used me as a sounding board to discuss practice and procedure within the schools. Some of the schools experienced more difficulties than others. For example, St Patrick's, because of its location in West Belfast, which for a significant period of the troubles experienced considerable civil disorder, had different needs and difficulties than Rathgael in Bangor, St Joseph's in Middletown and Whiteabbey Girls School.
9. It is perhaps worth remembering that the training schools, largely modelled on the old Approved School system in Great Britain, were trying to function in caring for young people at a time of great civil unrest in Northern Ireland where many of the young people were in danger from some of the paramilitaries, sometimes with serious and indeed fatal consequences as is already known to this Inquiry.
10. The early 1980's saw major changes in relation to services and accommodation for young people in trouble. In other parts of the United Kingdom the Approved Schools became known as Community Homes with Education. Schools were experiencing many problems of coping with very difficult and dangerous residents in their care. The Department of Health and the Home Office embarked on a policy of developing the concept of Youth Treatment. St Charles Youth Treatment Centre in Brentwood, Essex opened in 1971 and the second unit, Glenthorne in Birmingham soon after. These Centres provided secure

1 for the staff.

2 Q. Sister, I should have actually mentioned one other
3 matter before I moved on from the whole issue of
4 inspections.

5 A. Uh-huh.

6 Q. I mean, what the documents that we were looking at show
7 to the Inquiry was that the Ministry of Home Affairs was
8 certainly involved in doing their job in the mid '60s.

9 A. Oh, yes.

10 Q. One name who has come up, Wesley Donnell was a Social
11 Services Inspector in later years.

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. I take it you would have had engagement with him?

14 A. Oh, yes, yes. I knew Wesley and saw him in the school.
15 He came on a regular basis. He came unannounced on
16 inspections too at times.

17 Q. He has told the Inquiry he would have visited the
18 training schools approximately once a month. Would that
19 have been your recollection?

20 A. Well, I wouldn't have been sure about that myself, but
21 I would imagine he would have. He certainly came very
22 frequently, but I wouldn't have always known when he was
23 there, because I wasn't involved in the units.

24 Q. Yes.

25 A. But he did come. I would presume if he said once

iii. Admission to the Intensive Care Unit may be permitted in a crisis situation for a period not exceeding 24 hours: Reasons for Admission:

- a. Suicidal: There must be sufficient evidence that the girl is in danger of seriously injuring herself
- b. So disruptive or unmanageable that she may endanger others.

Only the Director or Assistant Director may permit a child to be placed in the Unit. In the case of Assessment Children, permission must be sought from the Social Worker. Time in Intensive Care should be for the shortest possible duration. In the event of a period in excess of 24 hours being envisaged a meeting of the following shall be summoned immediately:

Relevant Social Services,
Psychologist
Mr Donnell
Representative from relevant Review Group
Chairman of the Board
Head of Unit
Key Worker
Director or Deputy Director

Referring Unit must furnish the Committee with a full report outlining:

Reasons
Plan
Expectations
Durations
Review Procedures
Staffing and Programme

There are no permanent staff in the Intensive Care Unit. The onus of responsibility is on the referring Unit to provide the major input into any programme of care.

GUIDELINES

- a. Two staff members must always be on duty in the Unit;

INTRODUCTION

This inspection of St Joseph's Training School was carried out by the Social Services Inspectorate of the Department of Health and Social Services under the powers contained in Section 168 of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1968 and Rule 55 of the Training School Rules (SRO) 1952 No 132. The inspection was requested by the Northern Ireland Office. The team comprised of Dr K F McCoy, Assistant Chief Inspector, Mr D P O'Brien and Mr C W Donnell. The Inspection took place during the period from 18-29 May and during the weekend of 6-7 June 1987. A total of 101 hours was spent in the school covering all times of the day.

The Inspectors would like to record their sincere thanks and appreciation to the Management Board, the Director, SR 240 and all the staff for their unstinted co-operation and hospitality. A special word of thanks and appreciation is due to the girls of St Joseph's for the manner in which they made the Inspectors welcome and their willingness to co-operate fully in this first major inspection.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED] has had several previous admissions to residential care. She is seriously disturbed and may have a psychiatric illness. She is violent, has severe mood swings and indulges in dangerous horseplay. She has no inner limits or controls and relates poorly. She continually talks about hating everybody and gets very angry. She functions at the same level as a 3 or 4 year old child. She practices self-injury and says she wants to be dead. She has been a victim of sexual abuse but cannot talk about it. She desperately needs security in her life. Her parents are unstable and really do not want [REDACTED] but continually give her false messages. Several plans have been made but all have ended in failure."

- 2.6 In general it would appear that girls referred to St Joseph's in recent years are more likely to have more intractable problems than those who were sent to this school in the past. Several of the young people were recipients of health, education and personal social services and came to the training school because they had failed to respond to "treatment". In most cases this involved periods of care in community resources including children's homes. Some of the girls are apprehensive on arrival because they had been "threatened" with referral to St Joseph's each time they misbehaved, refused to conform or failed to meet the expectations of others. They bring with them layers of learned behaviour which have to be "removed" before rehabilitation can take place. This is often a slow painful process punctuated with setbacks but in which rejection of the young person has no place.

Views of the Children

- 2.7 The Inspectors met most of the girls at some time during their stay in St Joseph's. Some of these contacts happened informally but others were initiated by the young people who invited the Inspectors to come to their "house" for a meal or an evenings entertainment. Some of the girls were poor communicators, but others freely gave their perceptions of life in St Joseph's and compared it with previous placements. Their views were wide-ranging but a consistent theme emerging was their high regard for the St Joseph's staff. Generally they were content with the treatment they received in the school and had no complaints.

Children's Files

- 2.8 The children's files are held in secure filing cabinets in the deputy director's office in the main school/administrative building. These are suspended

5.0 DAILY LIFE

- 5.1 The day begins for the girls when they are called at approximately 8.15 am. Between rising and departing for school they have breakfast and carry out their allotted "services" or chores. Assembly in the school is held at 9.30 am and this takes the form of a short talk, drawing upon current issues, and sometimes references are made to specific incidents which may have occurred during the previous day.
- 5.2 School continues until 10.45 am when the girls have a 15 minute break in the units. Lunch is served at 1.00 pm in the school canteen and this is followed by a period of relaxation in the units from 1.30 pm to 2.00 pm. The school finishes each day at 4.00 pm. From 4.00 pm until 10.00 pm there is time for evening activities, which are unstructured and optional. Girls take their turn at cooking but apart from that task, which comes one week in six or seven depending on the number of children in the unit, evenings are a time of relaxation. The girls are free to walk, swim, attend the discos, listen to music, talk with each other, play or do whatever appeals to them. Time is spent over the evening meal, the pace of the day is slowed down and staff and girls have the opportunity to talk of serious issues and the everyday events such as TV, fashion, school and whatever is current in the unit.
- 5.3 Supper is served around 9.15 pm and usually consists of tea, biscuits, toast, light snacks or perhaps some baking that the girl on kitchen duty may have done during that evening. Supper is taken round the fire, the girls in their nightdresses possibly following a shower or hair washing or an activity such as swimming. Supper is a quiet unwinding time of the day, a time for discussion or just being quiet. The girls go up to bed at between 10.00-10.30 pm out follows half an hour later. Since the night staff sleep in the unit they go upstairs with the girls at 10.30 pm. In general there is a degree of latitude in bedtimes for example if there is a particularly interesting programme on TV they are allowed to stay up to see the end of it. This is more evident on Friday nights when it is established practice to allow the girls to stay up until the end of the late night movie, usually around 1.30 am.
- 5.4 Saturday is a completely relaxed and unstructured day. The girls usually have a long lie-in getting up between 12.30 pm and 1.00 pm. There are some general housekeeping duties to be performed and the girls do this with the staff. The afternoons are spent in a variety of ways. The girls can play cards, listen to music, spend time walking or lying about outside if the weather is good. Sometimes shopping trips are organised into the nearby towns of Armagh or Craigavon. Trips are made to forest parks, leisure centres or perhaps a picnic is organised. The girls have a say in

- 6.6 Staff strive to maintain a facilitating ethos in the house unit ie an environment where there is warmth, openness, trust and acceptance. It is recognised that to create the proper climate for work in which a valid assessment can be made staff need to build a relationship with the girl. All staff of the unit are involved though one of them is identified as the case co-ordinator with specific responsibility for liaising with the girl's family, working jointly with other professional staff, contacting other agencies, etc. A contribution may also be made during the assessment period by the St Joseph's field social worker. The psychologists who come to the school two days each week, made a significant contribution to all assessment reports.
- 6.7 Normally the assessment/short term programme takes between 5 and 15 weeks. Progress is reviewed weekly by the staff of the training school and, if the maximum period is used, two case conferences are called with representatives from all agencies involved. Where appropriate an assessment report is prepared by the deputy director for the Court. If the girl is transferring to another agency or remaining in St Joseph's for a longer period then an initial plan is made for her future care.

Long Stay Houses

- 6.8 Following assessment in house 1 a girl who is to remain in St Joseph's for a longer term is placed in one of the three long stay houses. While each house functions within the framework set by management there are discreet differences in approach. Often these can be attributed to the talent and charisma of the staff involved and to the type of training which they have undertaken. The regime within a particular house is determined by the staff and tailored to meet the needs of the girls who are in the group. These matters are carefully considered when a transfer from house 1 is being arranged. Placement will be made where it is felt that the girl's needs can best be met but also taking into consideration the effect that her placement may have on the other girls in the group.
- 6.9 A few days after the decision has been reached a transfer between house 1 and one of the long stay houses is arranged using the following procedures:
- i Initially there is a preparation meeting between house 1 and the staff of the long stay house which involves giving over personal files and other relevant information.
 - ii The long term house staff prepare the existing group of girls for the new member. They ask them to recall their own fears and anxieties at the time of their move and ask the girls to support the new girl. Possible difficulties may be pointed out to the girls

at this stage as this helps them to identify more with the staff and the group.

- iii house 1 staff bring the new girl and all her belongings and volunteers from the group help her settle into her new room.
- iv The new girl generally returns to house 1 for her evening meal and returns to the unit around 8 pm.
- v There is a short group meeting when the house rules are discussed and with the help of the girls the staff's expectations of the new arrival are pointed out.
- vi As soon as possible a co-ordinator is designated and she makes herself known to the girl's social worker, parents/guardians or other relevant people.
- vii An initial plan is drawn up by the staff team after meetings with other interested parties.

6.10 All three houses provide nurturing and set limits for their residents. Many of the girls have had painful experiences, broken relationships and have developed maladapted behaviour patterns. They need time to recover and to develop confidence to share their feelings with the adults who care for them. Relationships with staff develop through honest communication, sharing in the daily routine of the house and through the development of specific programmes to meet the individual's needs. The children are supervised throughout the day and they are expected to spend most of their free time in their own house. Their energy is channelled into creative activities like cooking, baking, sewing and home-making and they have the opportunity to take part in games, swimming, etc. There are times set for getting up in the morning and retiring in the evening. After dark the outer doors of the house are locked and they may also be locked on other occasions if it is felt that it would prevent a girl from absconding.

Visiting

6.11 Every effort is made to maintain links between the girls and their families. Most of the young people spend a number of weekends at home during the course of a year. At other times family and friends are encouraged to visit them in St Joseph's. Parents may come at any time but weekend visiting is encouraged as this is less disruptive to the routine of the school. If relationships between a girl and her parents/guardians have broken down then staff may undertake intensive family work to bring them together again. However it is recognised that some girls have come to St Joseph's for protection from close relatives and in these cases visiting may not be possible. Some of the girls are introduced to foster parents while in St Joseph's

what they do, there is ample opportunity for freedom of action.

- 5.5 A daily newspaper is delivered throughout the week and one or two papers are taken on Sundays. In addition teenage magazines, such as "Jackie" are available to the girls. With the exception of house 1, the girls are free to write and receive uncensored letters and make and receive telephone calls between 5.00 pm and 10.00 pm each evening. They are encouraged to have their boyfriends to visit. In the case of the hostel the residents there make use of the pay phone in the staff flats.
- 5.6 House 1, because of its role as a reception/assessment, unit has a slightly different policy in relation to telephone calls and letters. In this house girls are not encouraged to make telephone calls. They can receive calls provided that the staff felt such calls would not be detrimental to the girl. If a recently admitted girl is unsettled or anxious she is allowed to make a call home but seemingly it has been the experience of staff that telephone calls can be unsettling, some intentionally so, and this has caused girls to abscond or present problems of difficult behaviour. In the case of letters in house 1 the staff read them before they are sent or received by the girls.
- 5.7 In general terms the environment and the daily life in St Joseph's is child centred. The staff are always available, supportive and involved in the lives of the girls. Some of the issues, such as the interception of telephone calls and letters have caused the Inspectors to reflect on the current practices in children's homes and inevitably to draw comparisons. The Inspectors are all too aware of the difficulties that many of the girls have faced before their admission to St Joseph's. The school has a duty to protect the vulnerable, abused girls in their care, they must be vigilant against those who would write or telephone and who might cause even more hurt or disruption to the young lives. To this end the Inspectors recognise the need for policies that are peculiar to dealing with this group of highly disordered and damaged adolescents. They accept the judgement of a group of very experienced staff and would be reluctant to recommend changes that possibly might lead to the creation of even more problems for girls or staff. The practice of censure in letters and telephone calls, even in a limited fashion, is an emotive subject and one that senior staff must exercise continuing oversight of to ensure that the rights of the individual to privacy are not infringed.
- 5.8 A feature of the daily life in St Joseph's is the degree of supervision that is exercised by staff. Supervision is not punitive or authoritarian but it is clear that staff usually know where the girls are, either in the units or on the way to and from school. Supervision is essential in

for a time from the pressures of family life or when they experience rejection. Sometimes they return for a weekend or overnight, just sufficient time to resolve some difficult situation at home or basically just a breakaway to relieve tensions.

- 7.14 So all the units make their unique contribution to the caring process, the staff use a variety of style of intervention, group work, family therapy, individual counselling and role play, always seeking to promote a continuum of care which is capable of responding to the needs of the girls, from the day they enter St Joseph's until the strong bond that is forged, is finally broken and they go on to lead as independent a life as possible.
- 7.15 The Inspectors saw all of the units in operation at all times of the day, including the weekend. The concepts set out in the philosophy document on openness, warmth, acceptance, non-judgemental attitude and movement at the girls pace, were all apparent. The relationship between staff and girls is honest and trusting, supportive and controlling as and when the need arises. The Inspectors were impressed by the quality of care provided for the girls and conclude that the leadership, at all levels throughout the school, have managed to engender a sense of commitment and service that is worthy of the highest praise.

Units 1-4 require 1 Senior Residential Social Worker and 4 Residential Social Workers and the Hostel 1 Senior and 3 RSWs ie a minimum of 24 staff. St Joseph's currently has an approved establishment of 4 Senior staff 24 RSWs (including Senior RSWs), one nurse and one senior social worker (after care). Of the 24 RSWs 2 are presently on full-time professional training and they have not been replaced. At the time of the inspection their duties were being covered by the Sisters working extended hours and by all staff carrying out additional work on a voluntary basis.

- 3.19 In deciding upon a final calculation of staff in St Joseph's it has been necessary to take into account 3 additional factors. Unlike the other training schools St Joseph's does not have: (1) night supervisors (2) house mothers or domestics and (3) the calculation for the holiday element is based on the lowest allowance ie 32 days. In relation to holiday staff with 10 years service or more they are entitled to 40 days leave per year. In the circumstances therefore it is recommended that the present establishment be increased to 26 RSW; an addition of 2 RSWs.

5. STAFF

- 5.1 The staff of St Joseph's consists of four managers, four senior residential social workers who act as heads of the house units, 17 residential social workers based in the house units, three in the hostel and two "floaters" who can be deployed where they are most needed. There is a small community care team, consisting of an assistant principal social worker who also is responsible for training and the Glen Road hostel and a part time social worker. There are five teachers including the teacher leader; the pool manager; four administrative staff, three of whom work part time; a cook and an ancillary worker.
- 5.2 With the exception of the pool manager and one part time residential social worker all the members of staff are women. Given that a high proportion of the girls have been sexually abused and that, in the majority of cases, it will probably have been by a man or men, there are some advantages in having a staff group who will not be perceived by them in a threatening light. The employment of men in either mixed sex residential units or ones solely for girls also inevitably creates additional problems in arranging satisfactory duty rotas. However, it is also important that girls who have had such experiences should be able to benefit from normal, healthy contacts with men who will not try to abuse them. The Director told the Inspector that the low level of healthy male influence in the school is recognised but that attempts to recruit men in the past have been unsuccessful, either because the candidates have been unsuitable or because they have not received satisfactory security clearance. Nevertheless it is recommended that the need to employ men should continue to be borne when filling posts in the future.
- 5.3 During his visit the Inspector had discussions with three of the four senior management staff. They were the Director, SR 240, the Deputy Director, SR 234, and the Assistant Deputy Director, SJM 78. The fourth member of this team, SR 235, was on unpaid leave having returned to a former post in Nigeria temporarily. At least one of the management staff is always on duty and contactable by mobile telephone.
- 5.4 The Inspector also met the four senior residential social workers, a number of the RSWs and three of the teachers who all helpfully told him about their roles in the school. As mentioned above each of the house units is headed by a senior and has four or five RSWs. Unlike any other children's home or training school in Northern Ireland the care staff work split shifts which means that the house units are unstaffed at some times of the day when the girls are in school but allows for additional staff to be on duty in the evenings when the girls are there. A duty rota for one of the long term houses is reproduced at Appendix A. It will be seen that it involves some members of staff working some quite long hours broken by short, rather unsocial periods off duty. This arrangement causes some resentment among staff but is

7. CHILDREN AND YOUNG PEOPLE

- 7.1 On Census Day, the 24 June 1993 there were 31 girls on the roll. Their ages ranged from 12 years 2 months to 16 years and 9 months. Only one girl was under 13 years of age at the date of admission to the school. There were, however, only 17 girls on campus on the census day. Ten were at Runkerry, two on leave and there were two absconders. The distribution of the children was as follows:-

In St Joseph's -	17
At Runkerry Centre -	10
Absconders -	2
Home (shared care) -	1
Extended leave -	1
TOTAL	31

Legal Status

- 7.2 The majority of the girls were on TSO but three were on POS and 3 on IDO.

Training School Orders	Place of Safety Orders	Interim Detention Orders
25	3	3

Previous Residence

- 7.3 Twenty of the girls were admitted from Children's Homes, nine from their own homes and two from other training schools.

Own Home	Children's Home	Other Training Schools
9	20	2

NB: 64.5% of the total population came to the school from children's homes.

- 7.4 The children were referred from the following areas:

EHSSB	WHSSB	SHSSB	NHSSB
12	10	5	4

- 7.5 The Eastern Health and Social Services Board still remains the highest contributor to the population of St Joseph's with the Western Board a close second. All of the children were admitted on care grounds.

6. STAFFING

- 6.1 Thirty three returns were made in respect of care staff in post and the structure is as follows:-

Director -	1
Deputy Director -	1
Deputy Assistant Director -	1
Senior Assistant -	1
Community Care Team -	2
Team Leaders -	4
Residential Social Workers -	22
Nurse -	1
TOTAL	33

- 6.2 The all female staff ages range from 22-57 years, the average age is 34.8 years. The length of service of those in post varies from 1½ to 20 years. Forty two per cent of all staff have been in post in excess of 5 years. This reflects a low turnover resulting in a stable, experienced and mature staff group. The 4 senior residential social workers are all very experienced with a combined service of 51 years.

Qualifications

- 6.3 The qualifications held by care staff are as follows:-

CQSW -	6
CSS -	2
Nursing (including psychiatric) -	4
Teaching/education -	4
Degrees -	9
No qualifications -	8
TOTAL	33

Some of the staff have dual qualifications in social work, teaching or nursing. In these cases their social work qualification is given for the purposes of the statistical return.

Training Opportunities

- 6.4 Two members of staff are currently seconded to full time social work training. One staff member is undertaking post qualifying training and during the last 12 months 20 members of staff have taken part in a variety of in-service courses including those with a focus on team building, sexual abuse and face to face work with young people.

- 3.3 The ages of the all female care staff range from 6 in the 20-29 age band to 4 in the 50-59 age band. Staff come from a variety of backgrounds, ie children's homes, primary schools, nursing, both general and psychiatric, and some have been recruited immediately following their professional social work training. Their length of service in the training school varies between one and 24 years, with many having had considerable experience in other areas of residential child care.

Staff Training

- 3.4 The staff have a variety of qualifications. There are 7 CQSW holders, one CSS, 4 SRN/SEN, one CRCC, one diploma in applied social studies, 5 miscellaneous degrees and 4 with certificates in education. One member of staff has attended a post-qualifying course in management studies. Two members of staff are currently on CQSW training.
- 3.5 As part of a general programme of staff development, staff are encouraged to take part in in-service courses and other seminars of interest. SR 240 and the senior assistant, [REDACTED] are responsible for the organisation of in-service courses in the school. The courses attended cover a range of subjects and include child sexual abuse, sexuality in residential care, drugs and counselling. All but four members of staff have participated in in-service courses. In addition almost all members of staff have taken part in a Myers Briggs personality typing. The latter exercise was mounted within the school using external resources. It aims to examine personality traits, attitudes etc and help staff groups identify, to some extent, their own strength and weaknesses.

Staff Rotas

- 3.6 Unlike many children's homes a two-shift system does not operate within St Joseph's. Staff work a 39 hour week and the average hours of work is calculated on the basis of the 4-week cycle. The house units are covered as follows:
- 2 members of staff are always on duty from 8.00 am - 10.00 am, one of these having slept-in the previous night. The same two members of staff, generally cover the units until 2.00 pm when the member of staff who slept-in finishes duty. With the exception of house one (admission) which is covered by the nurse, all of the units are closed between 2.00 pm and 4.00 pm, excluding school holidays and weekends. Staff return to duty at 4.00 pm and continue until 10.00 pm and when possible 3 members of staff are always on duty at this particularly important time of day. Staff are not paid overtime, generally time off in lieu is given when possible. The senior assistant, who has responsibility for making out the duty rotas indicated that there is a high level of co-operation and reciprocity between staff and senior management, thus ensuring adequate

reception room, kitchen, bathroom and toilets. In addition there are four flats comprised of a bedroom and sitting-room with shared kitchen and bathroom and toilet facilities. This area, which can be separated from the main hostel, can be used flexibly to accommodate a mother and her baby, a particular girl or a group of girls, etc. One of the flats is used by the senior member of staff who is "on call" overnight.

Recreational Facilities

- 4.10 A swimming pool and games hall complex is sited centrally between the hostel and the house units and within easy reach of the school. The games hall is equipped for gymnastics and has a stage at one end suitable for concerts, plays, etc. The swimming pool supervisor's office has a large window on the interior wall overlooking the pool. There is a changing room and showers associated with this area. There is also a service area for filtering, chlorinating and heating swimming pool water. Excess hot water is circulated through the central heating system in the hostel and to the resident staff accommodation for two hours each day.

Staff Accommodation

- 4.11 A number of staff live in accommodation provided on the site. There are 2 semi-detached houses for married couples and eight flats divided between two units. These three two-storeyed buildings are clustered together close to the girls' house units. A detached house situated close to the main entrance is occupied by the caretaker/groundsman and his family. All of the modern buildings are finished in light red brick, with mineral felt roofs and have a well maintained exterior.

Fire/Safety Precautions

- 4.12 The house units are equipped with a break glass fire alarm system and smoke sensors have been installed in the girls bedrooms and in the lounge. There are three types of fire-fighting equipment in each block ie hose reel located on the corridor between each pair of units, fire extinguishers attached to the wall outside of the offices and fire blankets in each kitchen. Smoke detectors, a fire hose reel and a fire blanket are provided in the hostel.

General

- 4.13 The living accommodation for the young persons in St Joseph's meets adequately the standards for space, size of bedrooms, etc set out in the Community Homes Design Guide. Some of the features for example the fireplace, and furniture together with the tasteful use of ornaments, pictures, photographs and the style of the interior

- If necessary services were not available in Northern Ireland for the treatment of behaviours or conditions, funding was made available by the Department (NIO) to ensure that those services were accessed in Great Britain on a case by case basis.

Oversight

- The Department (MOHA and NIO) ensured that SJM was the subject of frameworks of regulation and inspection, and that they had the benefit of professional systems of advice and assistance to inform improvements in practice.
- The Department (MOHA) took steps (in 1965-66) to ensure that issues of underperformance at SJM were appropriately addressed.
- While the Department (MOHA and NIO) provided financial support and regulation, the staff at SJM were directly answerable to a Board of Management which was afforded a high level of autonomy by the Department.
- The Department provided additional funding as and when required in answer to direct requests from the Director of SJM. The training school at SJM was regarded as generously staffed, resourced and equipped.
- The enactment of the Training School Rules set out the clear structures and standards to be followed by the management and staff of SJM in relation to the care of the children placed under their control, and this was supported by a system of inspection.

9. RECOMMENDATIONS

1. It is recommended that the current staffing arrangement of having only one person on duty in the long stay house units after 8pm on Saturdays and Sundays should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.4)
2. It is recommended that the provisions of Rule 56 of the Training Schools Rules should be used to seek the Northern Ireland Office's consent to the Board of Management meeting at quarterly rather than monthly intervals as specified in the Rules. (Paragraph 6.1)
3. It is recommended that care should be taken to ensure that visits by Board members take place at monthly intervals. (Paragraph 6.3)
4. It is recommended that more frequent fire drills should be held, particularly in House 1 where there is a high "turnover" of girls. (Paragraph 6.5)
5. It is recommended that details of discharges, licences etc should be recorded in the family details section of the admission/discharge register in the absence of a section with specific provision for the. (Paragraph 6.6)
6. It is recommended that a punishment book should be maintained to record the use of any sanctions. (Paragraph 6.11)
7. It is recommended that the Northern Ireland Office's consent should be sought to the arrangements whereby the Review Committees undertake the Board of Management's responsibilities in terms of reviewing the girls' cases and considering their suitability to be placed out on licence. (Paragraph 6.19).

6. COMPLIANCE WITH THE TRAINING SCHOOL RULES

Rule 8 - Meetings of the Management Board

6.1 This rule requires that "The Board of Management shall meet so far as practicable once a month at the School". The minutes of the Board Meetings show that the Board met on 24 June and 30 September 1993 and 20 January, 28 April, 15 June and 29 September during the 18 months prior to the inspection, that is at approximately quarterly intervals rather than the monthly ones specified. Rule 56 allows for arrangements to be made with the Northern Ireland Office to dispense with any of the requirements by prior arrangements. It is not known if such an arrangement has been made in the past to allow the Board to meet at three monthly intervals but, if one has not been made and if the members consider that the present frequency of their meetings is adequate, it is recommended that they should make an application now.

6.2 The minutes of the Board meeting of 15th June 1994 show that a wide range of topics were considered. The items on the agenda were;

Staffing,
Annual meeting with NIO,
Training Strategy,
Staff appraisal,
Minutes of the review committee,
Senior staff salary scales,
Board Members' visits,
Unannounced visit by Social Services Inspectorate, Child protection.

Rule 10(3) The school shall be visited at least once a month by at least one member of the Board of Management, who shall satisfy himself regarding the care of the boys or girls and the state of the school...

6.3 The records show that Board members visited the school during 1994 on 20 January, 28 February, 26 April, 24 May, 6 July, 22 August, 6 October and 14 November. Apparently there were no visits in March, June or September therefore it must be recommended that care should be taken to ensure that visits do take place at monthly intervals. The records also indicate the focus of each visit which included visits to the houses, tours of the campus and involvement in the end of year celebrations. It must be pointed out that the focus of the visits is specified in Rule 10(3), that is to "satisfy himself regarding the care of the boys or girls and the state of the school". It is important that irrespective of whatever else is done the Board Member should spend sufficient time talking to the young people and making other enquiries to be able to satisfy himself or herself on these matters.

particularly useful to the review, licensing and placement process of the school. Both Committees report to the Management Board who ratifies their decisions. All young people are encouraged to attend these review meetings and the uptake is quite high. The deliberation of these Committees are recorded and an examination showed that the records are up to date.

20. Rule 50 - Medical Arrangements

Long established medical arrangements continue to function in the school. A local general practitioner acts as medical officer and attends the school regularly. He carries out the duties required by the School including making quarterly returns to the NIO. A daily medical record, which gives details of illnesses, medical complaints and treatments was provided for examination.

21. Rule 51(1) - Dental Arrangements

There is no on site dental treatment available in the school. The young people attend a community dental practice in Armagh. Regular check ups are carried out every 6 months. All appointments, check-ups and other treatments are arranged by the nurse in the school and she also maintains all on site dental records.

22. Conclusions

During the course of the 12 hour visit to St Joseph's the Inspector had the opportunity to meet with all grades of staff, mingle freely with the young people and visited most parts of the complex. He attended the daily assembly, visited the young people in class, saw them at lunch time and spent 3 hours visiting them in their house units in the evening. Much informal discussion took place between the Inspector and the young people. It was evident that the young people had been prepared for the visit. They knew who the Inspector was, why he was visiting, and their right to see him privately to

raise any issues or concerns that they had. The young people are at ease with adults and this much in evidence during the visit. There was a desire to talk about the house unit and "show off" their rooms. A relaxed atmosphere prevailed in all houses, with the young people engaged in a variety of activities. No matters or complaints were brought to the attention of the Inspector.

23. It is concluded on the basis of the visit that the usual high standards of care observed in previous inspections and regular visits to the school continues. There were no indications that any untoward practices were taking place. The young people looked relaxed and contented, related well to staff and appear to function well as a group in the units. It is possible life in St Joseph's is not always so settled but at least on this occasion calmness and good humour prevailed.

Recommendations

24. Only 2 matters require attention and reference has already been made in the body of the report:-
- i. Routine monthly visits should be carried out by a member of the Management Board (Para 10). Rule 10(3);
 - ii. A separate record of fire drills should be maintained (Para 11). Rule 14(b) and (c).

Children's Questionnaires

7.6 In an effort to provide the young people with an opportunity to comment on the care provided in the school questionnaires were sent out to each young person. They were returned to the SSI in a pre-paid envelope ensuring that the children could comment as openly and honestly as possible. Although there were some minor complaints the young people generally were happy in St Joseph's. All had a say in the clothes they wore and the food they ate. With the exception of 2 girls all felt there was someone in the unit they could talk to. All knew of someone they could complain to if they had a problem or concern. The senior staff section were frequently mentioned in this section as the ones to whom the girls felt they could talk which is an indication that senior staff are readily available to all the young people. Some of the young people wanted more freedom, to be able to stay out at night! The "complaints" could be summarised as follows:-

- wished for doors and locks on the bedrooms;
- St Joseph's too far from home;
- more cigarettes required please;
- more weekends please;
- some felt lonely.

On the positive side all felt they were fairly treated and were not picked upon. Rather sadly one felt that the best thing about St Joseph's was being away from home. One young person felt she was lonely and her main worry was "going home and Dad". This first time use of the questionnaire produced an interesting response and provided an opportunity for the young people to set out their response to the care in St Joseph's. It also helped the Inspectorate form a view which was tested out by other methods such as interviews and observations.

10. PARENTAL ATTITUDES

10.1 In all 28 questionnaires were sent out to the parents/guardians of the young people in the school. This was the first attempt in an inspection of a training school to get a user perspective of the experience of parents in their dealings with the school.

10.2 There was a 50% response to the survey, which is regarded as a good response rate. The response of the survey was as follows:-

1. Have you been able to visit your child in St Joseph's?

YES

13

NO

1 (too far to travel)

2. Were you made welcome?

YES

14

NO

-

3. Were you able to speak with your child in private?

YES

14

NO

-

4. Do you feel your child is well cared for?

YES

13

NO

1 (too easy to abscond from the school)

5. Invitation to review meetings.

YES

12

NO

2 (would come if invited!)

6. If you attend review meetings can you make your views known?

YES

12

NO

-

7. Do you have any complaints to make above the care of your child in St Joseph's?

YES

2*

NO

12

10.3 Of the 2 "complaints" made one said the young people did not get a big enough allowance (£1 per day) when they are on home leave. (A safeguard

operated by the school to protect the young people's finances as the average pocket money allowance is £7 per week). The other parent said she had made a complaint to the RUC, in Belfast but did not specify the nature of the complaint. Efforts to determine the nature of this latter complaint have so far been unsuccessful. Although the original questionnaire sent to the parents was completed a follow up letter sent to the parents has been returned as marked "not known at this address". It has been suggested that the family still reside there.

- 10.4 Of the questionnaires returned 12 (85%) made helpful and complimentary remarks about the staff, the friendly atmosphere that prevailed and generally they felt that their children were well cared for and were benefiting from the placement in the school.

operated by the school to protect the young people's finances as the average pocket money allowance is £7 per week). The other parent said she had made a complaint to the RUC, in Belfast but did not specify the nature of the complaint. Efforts to determine the nature of this latter complaint have so far been unsuccessful. Although the original questionnaire sent to the parents was completed a follow up letter sent to the parents has been returned as marked "not known at this address". It has been suggested that the family still reside there.

- 10.4 Of the questionnaires returned 12 (85%) made helpful and complimentary remarks about the staff, the friendly atmosphere that prevailed and generally they felt that their children were well cared for and were benefiting from the placement in the school.

2. CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS

- 2.1 The first major inspection of St Joseph's took place in May 1987. At that time the Inspectorate was impressed with the standard of care provided for the young people. Since that inspection a number of changes have taken place. In physical terms a new intensive care unit has been provided and the educational provision has been substantially refurbished. There have been changes in staff, in physical provision and the Community of St Louis has suffered in the loss of Sister Catherine Dunne who died in a terrorist incident in July 1990. Despite the changes and the trauma, St Joseph's has continued to provide child care of a very high quality and the Inspectors are pleased to note the maintenance of such standards.
- 2.2 The credit for much of the success of the school and the standard of care provided rest with the staff. From the Director and the senior management team to the unit care staff a feeling of commitment to the children and loyalty to the organisation is very evident. There are a number of features that contribute to the effective provision of care. Operational policies in the school are straightforward, unambiguous and understood by all. The members of staff, at all levels, have a sound knowledge of the young people and a consistent approach underpins the approach to care. The staff are encouraged to take initiative and to accept responsibility for their actions. A management structure exists which directs practice and brings maximum support to the care staff and to each other.
- 2.3 A major feature in the smooth and effective running of St Joseph's is the style of leadership which stimulates, gives confidence and brings together collective effort. Good practice in the school depends to a large extent on the unswerving commitment and support of the senior management team. The Inspectors cannot stress too strongly the importance of this group. The team of 4 staff provide an all day, all year round cover to the staff and young people alike. The Inspectors had some minor concerns about the ability of the senior staff group to continue with this burden of management. Although some relief has been gained by including the teacher leader on the senior staff roster the Inspectors feel that additional ways may need to be explored to spread the burden of pressure on the senior team.
- 2.4 Since the last inspection a community care hostel on the Glen Road in Belfast has been established. The hostel, apart from its residential role, has become the focus of providing a caring outreach to the young people from West Belfast who have left St Joseph's and are making efforts to become reintegrated with their family and community.
- 2.5 The Management Board, through its sub-committee structure continues to carry out its functions and responsibilities of management and monitoring in an efficient and business like way. It provides a framework of management and support and enables the senior staff team to carry out the day to day functions of the school with the maximum delegation and with a high level of

2. CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS

- 2.1 The first major inspection of St Joseph's took place in May 1987. At that time the Inspectorate was impressed with the standard of care provided for the young people. Since that inspection a number of changes have taken place. In physical terms a new intensive care unit has been provided and the educational provision has been substantially refurbished. There have been changes in staff, in physical provision and the Community of St Louis has suffered in the loss of Sister Catherine Dunne who died in a terrorist incident in July 1990. Despite the changes and the trauma, St Joseph's has continued to provide child care of a very high quality and the Inspectors are pleased to note the maintenance of such standards.
- 2.2 The credit for much of the success of the school and the standard of care provided rest with the staff. From the Director and the senior management team to the unit care staff a feeling of commitment to the children and loyalty to the organisation is very evident. There are a number of features that contribute to the effective provision of care. Operational policies in the school are straightforward, unambiguous and understood by all. The members of staff, at all levels, have a sound knowledge of the young people and a consistent approach underpins the approach to care. The staff are encouraged to take initiative and to accept responsibility for their actions. A management structure exists which directs practice and brings maximum support to the care staff and to each other.
- 2.3 A major feature in the smooth and effective running of St Joseph's is the style of leadership which stimulates, gives confidence and brings together collective effort. Good practice in the school depends to a large extent on the unswerving commitment and support of the senior management team. The Inspectors cannot stress too strongly the importance of this group. The team of 4 staff provide an all day, all year round cover to the staff and young people alike. The Inspectors had some minor concerns about the ability of the senior staff group to continue with this burden of management. Although some relief has been gained by including the teacher leader on the senior staff roster the Inspectors feel that additional ways may need to be explored to spread the burden of pressure on the senior team.
- 2.4 Since the last inspection a community care hostel on the Glen Road in Belfast has been established. The hostel, apart from its residential role, has become the focus of providing a caring outreach to the young people from West Belfast who have left St Joseph's and are making efforts to become reintegrated with their family and community.
- 2.5 The Management Board, through its sub-committee structure continues to carry out its functions and responsibilities of management and monitoring in an efficient and business like way. It provides a framework of management and support and enables the senior staff team to carry out the day to day functions of the school with the maximum delegation and with a high level of

18.0 RECOMMENDATIONS

The following is a list of recommendations arising out of this report.

1. It is recommended that the present policy document be re-examined by the Management Board and consideration given to the special contribution that the school can make in the future (Para 1.12).
2. It is recommended that senior management take steps to improve the general order of files (Para 2.9).
3. The Management Board should re-examine the possibility of employing male staff in the residential setting, without endangering the quality of care presently being provided (Para 3.11).
4. It is recommended that the establishment of residential social workers be increased by two (Para 3.19).
5. The amount of money available for girls' birthday gifts should be increased to a more realistic level (Para 6.24).
6. The Management Board should review the current policy and practice in this area (smoking) and give some consideration to including incentives for non-smoking (Para 6.25).
7. A record of formal visits by Board members to the school should be kept (Para 14.2).
8. It is recommended that a formal system of monitoring be adopted (Para 14.4).
9. It is recommended that the Management Board give thought to the development of a training base within the school from which good child care practice can be disseminated (Para 17.12).

9. RECOMMENDATIONS

1. It is recommended that the current staffing arrangement of having only one person on duty in the long stay house units after 8pm on Saturdays and Sundays should be reviewed. (Paragraph 5.4)
2. It is recommended that the provisions of Rule 56 of the Training Schools Rules should be used to seek the Northern Ireland Office's consent to the Board of Management meeting at quarterly rather than monthly intervals as specified in the Rules. (Paragraph 6.1)
3. It is recommended that care should be taken to ensure that visits by Board members take place at monthly intervals. (Paragraph 6.3)
4. It is recommended that more frequent fire drills should be held, particularly in House 1 where there is a high "turnover" of girls. (Paragraph 6.5)
5. It is recommended that details of discharges, licences etc should be recorded in the family details section of the admission/discharge register in the absence of a section with specific provision for the. (Paragraph 6.6)
6. It is recommended that a punishment book should be maintained to record the use of any sanctions. (Paragraph 6.11)
7. It is recommended that the Northern Ireland Office's consent should be sought to the arrangements whereby the Review Committees undertake the Board of Management's responsibilities in terms of reviewing the girls' cases and considering their suitability to be placed out on licence. (Paragraph 6.19).

PRIVATE

3. My dormitory had six or seven girls my own age in it. I moved to bigger dormitories as the years passed. One of them was the Sacred Heart room, with 14 or 15 girls. The whole time I was in the convent my sisters and I were kept separate from each other. We never shared a dormitory and we were not allowed to spend our free time with each other or develop our relationship as sisters. My youngest sister SJM27 was only 11 months old and she was the youngest child in the convent. SR248 took care of her. She was a very good nun and she didn't know how badly the other nuns beat us. The other nuns could see this that SR248 was good to SJM27 and SR249 SR250 SR251 SR252 beat her when she was older because of this.
4. The nuns slept in a cell attached to the dormitory. We were not allowed to talk to each other at night or to leave our beds even to go to the toilet. If I needed to go to the toilet, I would hold it in until the next morning. I don't remember ever wetting the bed. The dormitory doors were always locked at night and to this day I always feel afraid if I am in a room with a closed door at night-time.
5. The first day I was there I was woken up by the nuns and pulled out of bed. We had to kneel on the floor and say prayers. I remember cleaning the floors because I had to go down on my hands and knees to do it. It was hard work. We used a type of wax that looked like candle grease and we had to polish the floors using this. It was hard to get the wax off the floors without leaving marks. I tied cloth to my shoes and slid up and down on the floor in order to polish it. The nuns caught me doing this and beat me. I don't remember which nun beat me.
6. We had to clean the dormitories and do laundry in the mornings. We went to Mass after these chores. I hated going to Mass. The priest was called Father SJM28 and I remember him slapping me on the face on one occasion when I went to take Communion. When we came back from Mass we had to clean the nuns' cells and the chapel. We had our breakfast after these chores at about 8 o'clock in the morning. This was usually porridge or bread and

PRIVATE

margarine with a mug of tea. We ate our meals in silence in the refectory. We were not allowed to talk to each other. The nuns walked up and down behind us while we were eating and they beat us with a long thin cane if they caught us talking during meal-times.

7. I remember getting beaten from time to time by each of the following nuns;

SR249 [REDACTED] SR251 [REDACTED] SR237 [REDACTED] SR250 [REDACTED] and SR252 [REDACTED]

SR252 [REDACTED] SR252 [REDACTED] had a ruler and she beat me on the front of my hands along my knuckles. It was sore. They each carried a long thin bamboo cane with them. We called it a 'sally rod'. It hurt and left red marks on my skin when I was beaten with it. We were never shown any affection by the nuns – no love at all. They were very cruel. I remember feeling frightened of them all the time.

8. The nuns frequently sent me out from school to buy newspapers for

SR253 [REDACTED] at about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. On one occasion I was sent to the shops in town to buy papers for her and I left them in her bedroom. I told her where I had left them and SR253 [REDACTED]

SR253 [REDACTED] said I was cheeky to her and accused me of lying. I think she thought this because I couldn't talk properly. I told her I wasn't being cheeky and that I didn't know what I did wrong. SR237 [REDACTED] came to me later that day and beat me with a stick. I had bruises all over my back and legs. The next day she punished me by making me stand in school against a wall with my hands held up. I stood like this for the whole school day; right from the start of school time until the end.

9. I first began my periods when I was about thirteen. I didn't know what was happening. I thought I was dying when I saw the blood and I was scared stiff to go to the toilet. I saw that my sheets were dirty and I didn't know what was wrong. I went down to the laundry that morning to wash them. SR237 [REDACTED]

SR237 [REDACTED] saw me and she thought I wet my bed. She took me upstairs to my dormitory, bent me over my bed ^{wie.} and beat me on my bare back and bottom with a long narrow stick. She beat me until she was tired and it was the worst beating I ever had the whole time I was there.

HIA 249

HIA 249

PRIVATE

10. She brought me to a store room after she finished beating me and gave me some sanitary napkins and a girdle but never really explained anything about sex or puberty to me. I ran away a few days after this beating because the conditions were so bad. I didn't get far because I didn't know the way home to [REDACTED] and I had nowhere to go. In the end, I had to go back to the convent and I remember being beaten again when I came back.
11. Two of the older girls [SJM29] and [SJM30] bullied the younger girls. I remember both these girls started bullying me when I was about 13 and they were about 15. They would look at my breasts and make fun of my body. We were bathed on a Tuesday and this would usually happen then. Once I was getting washed in the toilet area on my own and [SJM30] came in. She touched me on my breasts as I was getting washed and made fun of me. Then she sang a song to me 'Little things mean a lot'. I don't remember these girls hitting me but they would both just touch me on my upper body and make fun of it.
12. There was no one I could have reported this to because I was afraid the nuns would beat me. There is a plot in the garden at Middletown convent and three girls are buried up there. [SJM31] was sent to St Luke's. She [SJM33] ran away and drowned in St Luke's river. The other two [SJM 32] and [SJM31] committed suicide. [SJM33] also died. I knew those girls as they used to eat at the same table as me. They were a couple of years older than me but we weren't friends. They were around 14 or 15 when they died and I was about 13. They just vanished and no-one ever said anything about what happened to them.
13. I remember when I was about 9 Middletown Barracks was blown up in an explosion. The girls in my dormitory heard the explosion and we were all very afraid. We thought the noise was made by ghosts. An older girl in the dormitory, [SJM34] told us 'there is somebody coming for us'. She prayed to the Devil and she scared us. [SR237] beat us that night and made us kneel on the stairs all night praying.

HIA 249

HIA 249

(SJM-068)) also described the room that the nuns slept in as a 'cell'. I would call the Sister's sleeping quarters rooms rather than a cell. It is unusual that this terminology has been used by both Applicants. It is unlikely that [HIA 178] given her young age on admission, was asked to sleep in the room close to [SR 237] [SR 237] slept in the room attached to the dormitory for older girls. [HIA 178] [HIA 178] would not have been there until she was at least 12. As she grew up, [HIA 178] would have moved into different dormitories. I believe that on admission, she was in the Immaculate or St Joseph's dormitory and then in her later teens she would have slept in the Sacred Heart dormitory. [HIA 178] recollection is that there were fourteen or fifteen girls in each dormitory. This seems a lot. The population of the school at that time was around thirty girls and so even if the orphanage was full it is unlikely there was any more than ten in each dormitory.

13. In paragraph 4, [HIA 178] states that [SR 237] punished her if any of the other girls were misbehaving. The punishment book records the punishment administered to all residents during [HIA 178] period of residency. There is no contemporaneous witness to support this statement.
14. [HIA 178] states that when she was 9 or 10, she was forced to kneel in the middle of the floor for the entire night because she had been playing and joking at bedtime. Although I accept that [SR 237] could have been strict with the girls, I find it difficult to accept that she would have forced a girl of any age to remain kneeling on the floor for the entire night. If it is accepted that this occurred then I agree that it was harsh and inappropriate.
15. In relation to paragraph 5, [HIA 178] states that when she was about 10 or 11, [SR 237] found a resident had been smoking. [HIA 178] states that without investigating, she blamed her for the incident. She claims that she stripped [HIA 178] of her clothes and beat her with a bamboo cane until she was black and blue. It is also stated that another nun, [redacted] held [HIA 178] hands during the beating. [redacted] did work as part of the housekeeping staff in St Joseph's between 1960 and 1962. During this period, [HIA 178] would have been twelve years old. [HIA 178] was 10/11 in 1958/1959. In 1959, the punishment book does not record any incidents of punishment. In 1958, there were four separate incidents. None of the reasons given for the punishment relate to smoking. I am unable to comment any further in relation to paragraph 5 of the statement other than to say that it would be inappropriate to beat any child in the manner described.

PRIVATE

margarine with a mug of tea. We ate our meals in silence in the refectory. We were not allowed to talk to each other. The nuns walked up and down behind us while we were eating and they beat us with a long thin cane if they caught us talking during meal-times.

7. I remember getting beaten from time to time by each of the following nuns;

SR249 [REDACTED] SR251 [REDACTED] SR237 [REDACTED] SR250 [REDACTED] and SR252 [REDACTED]

SR252 [REDACTED] SR252 [REDACTED] had a ruler and she beat me on the front of my hands along my knuckles. It was sore. They each carried a long thin bamboo cane with them. We called it a 'sally rod'. It hurt and left red marks on my skin when I was beaten with it. We were never shown any affection by the nuns – no love at all. They were very cruel. I remember feeling frightened of them all the time.

8. The nuns frequently sent me out from school to buy newspapers for

SR253 [REDACTED] at about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. On one occasion I was sent to the shops in town to buy papers for her and I left them in her bedroom. I told her where I had left them and SR253 [REDACTED]

SR253 [REDACTED] said I was cheeky to her and accused me of lying. I think she thought this because I couldn't talk properly. I told her I wasn't being cheeky and that I didn't know what I did wrong. SR237 [REDACTED] came to me later that day and beat me with a stick. I had bruises all over my back and legs. The next day she punished me by making me stand in school against a wall with my hands held up. I stood like this for the whole school day; right from the start of school time until the end.

9. I first began my periods when I was about thirteen. I didn't know what was happening. I thought I was dying when I saw the blood and I was scared stiff to go to the toilet. I saw that my sheets were dirty and I didn't know what was wrong. I went down to the laundry that morning to wash them. SR237 [REDACTED] HIA 249 [REDACTED]

SR237 [REDACTED] saw me and she thought I wet my bed. She took me upstairs to my dormitory, bent me over my bed ^{wiee.} and beat me on my bare back and bottom with a long narrow stick. She beat me until she was tired and it was the worst beating I ever had the whole time I was there.

PRIVATE

14. I went to school every weekday from the ages of 4 until I left at 16 but I didn't learn anything. The teachers I remember were SR250 and SR249 SR249. There were no lay teachers at the school. Both these nuns beat me when I couldn't pronounce my words. I kept getting my letters and my words confused, for example, instead of "God bless you", I wrote "God blast you". They beat me for that mistake but I can't remember who beat me. I still can't read or write. The nuns did not help me to learn. They just left me at the back of the classroom. We were taught with the children from the town and although the nuns beat us, they did not beat those children.
15. I vaguely remember being ill and being left by myself in bed in my dormitory. I don't remember being taken to a doctor or getting any medicine on this occasion. I don't remember a nurse in the convent or a sick bay. I broke my arm once when was about 15. I was at school and I was leaning back in my chair and fell over. The nuns did take me to hospital in [REDACTED] and I was there for one ~~or two~~ days. *My arm was set in plaster of paris.* HIA 249
16. The nuns took us on holiday every year to [REDACTED]. We would go there as a group. I also remember having to cook and clean while we were there.
17. On one occasion Inspectors from Stormont came to look around the convent. I was about 9 or 10. They asked me 'Who made the Hail Mary?' I told them 'St Joseph'. I was beaten for saying this after they left. I remember that day I was waiting with the other girls in the refectory near a table where some meals were laid out. We ate them as we thought this food was for us but it was for the nuns. We got a terrible beating because of this but at least we did not go to bed hungry that day. We didn't get stars/marks for good behaviour for a while after that.
18. My father visited us at least every month for the whole time I was in the convent. He came on his bicycle from [REDACTED] to Armagh. My mother, my [REDACTED] and my half sister, [REDACTED] came to visit as well from time to time. We were not allowed to say hello or hug our visitors. We were taken in one at a time to see my parents; the nuns did not allow us to spend time

HIA 249

PRIVATE

margarine with a mug of tea. We ate our meals in silence in the refectory. We were not allowed to talk to each other. The nuns walked up and down behind us while we were eating and they beat us with a long thin cane if they caught us talking during meal-times.

7. I remember getting beaten from time to time by each of the following nuns;

SR249 [REDACTED] SR251 [REDACTED] SR237 [REDACTED] SR250 [REDACTED] and SR252 [REDACTED]

SR252 [REDACTED] SR252 [REDACTED] had a ruler and she beat me on the front of my hands along my knuckles. It was sore. They each carried a long thin bamboo cane with them. We called it a 'sally rod'. It hurt and left red marks on my skin when I was beaten with it. We were never shown any affection by the nuns – no love at all. They were very cruel. I remember feeling frightened of them all the time.

8. The nuns frequently sent me out from school to buy newspapers for

SR253 [REDACTED] at about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. On one occasion I was sent to the shops in town to buy papers for her and I left them in her bedroom. I told her where I had left them and SR253 [REDACTED]

SR253 [REDACTED] said I was cheeky to her and accused me of lying. I think she thought this because I couldn't talk properly. I told her I wasn't being cheeky and that I didn't know what I did wrong. SR237 [REDACTED] came to me later that day and beat me with a stick. I had bruises all over my back and legs. The next day she punished me by making me stand in school against a wall with my hands held up. I stood like this for the whole school day; right from the start of school time until the end.

9. I first began my periods when I was about thirteen. I didn't know what was happening. I thought I was dying when I saw the blood and I was scared stiff to go to the toilet. I saw that my sheets were dirty and I didn't know what was wrong. I went down to the laundry that morning to wash them. SR237 [REDACTED] HIA 249

SR237 [REDACTED] saw me and she thought I wet my bed. She took me upstairs to my dormitory, bent me over my bed ^{wie.} and beat me on my bare back and bottom with a long narrow stick. She beat me until she was tired and it was the worst beating I ever had the whole time I was there.

PRIVATE

10. She brought me to a store room after she finished beating me and gave me some sanitary napkins and a girdle but never really explained anything about sex or puberty to me. I ran away a few days after this beating because the conditions were so bad. I didn't get far because I didn't know the way home to [REDACTED] and I had nowhere to go. In the end, I had to go back to the convent and I remember being beaten again when I came back.

11. Two of the older girls [SJM29] and [SJM30] bullied the younger girls. I remember both these girls started bullying me when I was about 13 and they were about 15. They would look at my breasts and make fun of my body. We were bathed on a Tuesday and this would usually happen then. Once I was getting washed in the toilet area on my own and [SJM30] came in. She touched me on my breasts as I was getting washed and made fun of me. Then she sang a song to me 'Little things mean a lot'. I don't remember these girls hitting me but they would both just touch me on my upper body and make fun of it.

12. There was no one I could have reported this to because I was afraid the nuns would beat me. There is a plot in the garden at Middletown convent and three girls are buried up there. [SJM31] was sent to St Luke's. She [SJM33] ran away and drowned in St Luke's river. The other two [SJM32] and [SJM31] committed suicide. [SJM33] also died. I knew those girls as they used to eat at the same table as me. They were a couple of years older than me but we weren't friends. They were around 14 or 15 when they died and I was about 13. They just vanished and no-one ever said anything about what happened to them.

13. I remember when I was about 9 Middletown Barracks was blown up in an explosion. The girls in my dormitory heard the explosion and we were all very afraid. We thought the noise was made by ghosts. An older girl in the dormitory, [SJM34] told us 'there is somebody coming for us'. She prayed to the Devil and she scared us. [SR237] beat us that night and made us kneel on the stairs all night praying.

HIA 249

- f) 29th October 1951, sulky – reprimanded and made to apologise; and
- g) 8th November 1953, destruction of clothing – one slap;
- h) 18th November 1954, destruction of clothing – one slap.

29. I have annexed the extracts from the punishment book which I have marked 'BD5'.

The punishment book was reviewed by the Ministry of Home Affairs and was signed by the Inspector. Corporal punishment was permitted at this time. If beatings were administered in the manner described by [HIA 249] and not recorded in the punishment book, then I accept this should not have occurred and I apologise for it.

30. In paragraph 8 (SJM-069) [HIA 249] states that she was sent out to buy newspapers for [HIA 253] and that this resulted in her being beaten with a stick later that day by [SR 237] [HIA 249] also states that the next day she was forced to stand in school all day with her hands held up. [HIA 253] did not live in the orphanage. She lived in the convent. It was very rare for children to be in the convent and I would never have seen any child in the convent bedroom. If [HIA 249] was punished by [HIA 237] in the manner described then I totally condemn her actions and apologise for them. I can only refer to the records which record the offences and the punishment received. None of these support her contention that she was punished for carrying out instructions from [SR 253]

31. In relation to paragraph 9 and 10 (SJM-069 and SJM -070) [HIA 249] states that she started her periods when she was thirteen and that as a result of this she was beaten by one of the Sisters. Again, I cannot comment specifically as I was not there. However, my recollection is that there were not significant discussions or explanations about puberty or periods in the 1950s. When a girl did start her period she was given the appropriate girdle and sanitary towels. I believe that this would have been consistent with the discussions in most families in the 1940s/50s. It would be unacceptable to beat or punish any child for starting her period. I fully condemn beating a young girl on her back and bottom until she was tired.

32. In response to paragraph 10 (SJM-070) there is no evidence in the files that [HIA 249] ran away when she was thirteen. [HIA 249] was [HIA 249] in 1955. There is no evidence of any punishments in the punishment book at all for 1955 in relation to [HIA 249]

PRIVATE

margarine with a mug of tea. We ate our meals in silence in the refectory. We were not allowed to talk to each other. The nuns walked up and down behind us while we were eating and they beat us with a long thin cane if they caught us talking during meal-times.

7. I remember getting beaten from time to time by each of the following nuns;

SR249 [REDACTED] SR251 [REDACTED] SR237 [REDACTED] SR250 [REDACTED] and SR252 [REDACTED]

SR252 [REDACTED] SR252 [REDACTED] had a ruler and she beat me on the front of my hands along my knuckles. It was sore. They each carried a long thin bamboo cane with them. We called it a 'sally rod'. It hurt and left red marks on my skin when I was beaten with it. We were never shown any affection by the nuns – no love at all. They were very cruel. I remember feeling frightened of them all the time.

8. The nuns frequently sent me out from school to buy newspapers for

SR253 [REDACTED] at about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. On one occasion I was sent to the shops in town to buy papers for her and I left them in her bedroom. I told her where I had left them and SR253 [REDACTED]

SR253 [REDACTED] said I was cheeky to her and accused me of lying. I think she thought this because I couldn't talk properly. I told her I wasn't being cheeky and that I didn't know what I did wrong. SR237 [REDACTED] came to me later that day and beat me with a stick. I had bruises all over my back and legs. The next day she punished me by making me stand in school against a wall with my hands held up. I stood like this for the whole school day; right from the start of school time until the end.

9. I first began my periods when I was about thirteen. I didn't know what was happening. I thought I was dying when I saw the blood and I was scared stiff to go to the toilet. I saw that my sheets were dirty and I didn't know what was wrong. I went down to the laundry that morning to wash them. SR237 [REDACTED]

SR237 [REDACTED] saw me and she thought I wet my bed. She took me upstairs to my dormitory, bent me over my bed ^{wie.} and beat me on my bare back and bottom with a long narrow stick. She beat me until she was tired and it was the worst beating I ever had the whole time I was there.

HIA 249

HIA 249

- f) 29th October 1951, sulky – reprimanded and made to apologise; and
- g) 8th November 1953, destruction of clothing – one slap;
- h) 18th November 1954, destruction of clothing – one slap.

29. I have annexed the extracts from the punishment book which I have marked 'BD5'.

The punishment book was reviewed by the Ministry of Home Affairs and was signed by the Inspector. Corporal punishment was permitted at this time. If beatings were administered in the manner described by [HIA 249] and not recorded in the punishment book, then I accept this should not have occurred and I apologise for it.

30. In paragraph 8 (SJM-069) [HIA 249] states that she was sent out to buy newspapers for [SR 253] and that this resulted in her being beaten with a stick later that day by [SR 253]. [HIA 249] also states that the next day she was forced to stand in school all day with her hands held up.

[SR 253] did not live in the orphanage. She lived in the convent. It was very rare for children to be in the convent and I would never have seen any child in the convent bedroom. If [HIA 249] was punished by [SR 237] in the manner described then I totally condemn her actions and apologise for them. I can only refer to the records which record the offences and the punishment received. None of these support her contention that she was punished for carrying out instructions from [SR 253].

31. In relation to paragraph 9 and 10 (SJM-069 and SJM -070) [HIA 249] states that she started her periods when she was thirteen and that as a result of this she was beaten by one of the Sisters. Again, I cannot comment specifically as I was not there. However, my recollection is that there were not significant discussions or explanations about puberty or periods in the 1950s. When a girl did start her period she was given the appropriate girdle and sanitary towels. I believe that this would have been consistent with the discussions in most families in the 1940s/50s. It would be unacceptable to beat or punish any child for starting her period. I fully condemn beating a young girl on her back and bottom until she was tired.

32. In response to paragraph 10 (SJM-070) there is no evidence in the files that [HIA 249] ran away when she was thirteen. [HIA 249] was [HIA 249] in 1955. There is no evidence of any punishments in the punishment book at all for 1955 in relation to [HIA 249].

1 Q. I wondered in what respect was she strict? How was she
2 strict? How did that manifest itself, Sister?

3 A. She took over from SR248, and SR248 was an elderly lady
4 when I knew her in , and she was a very outgoing,
5 chatty kind of personality, whereas SR237 would have
6 been more reserved, but the school was moving from being
7 an industrial school/orphanage to a training school. So
8 there were less small children in the school and there
9 were more the teenage age in the school. So I suppose
10 there was a different approach.

11 Q. You said that SR248 was seen as a motherly figure.

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. But that was not SR237's personality, if I can put it
14 that way.

15 A. Yes. She was a more reserved person.

16 Q. I asked: were the girls frightened of SR237 in a way
17 that they might not have been of SR248?

18 A. SR248 wasn't dealing with the girls as such as a group
19 when I was there. SR237 was. She had a bunch of keys
20 that hung on a short chain from her waistline and you'd
21 hear the keys when she would be coming along. So people
22 would straighten up and behave.

23 Q. The girls you said changed their behaviour if they saw
24 her coming or heard her coming in her case.

25 A. Yes.

- f) 29th October 1951, sulky – reprimanded and made to apologise; and
- g) 8th November 1953, destruction of clothing – one slap;
- h) 18th November 1954, destruction of clothing – one slap.

29. I have annexed the extracts from the punishment book which I have marked 'BD5'.

The punishment book was reviewed by the Ministry of Home Affairs and was signed by the Inspector. Corporal punishment was permitted at this time. If beatings were administered in the manner described by [HIA 249] and not recorded in the punishment book, then I accept this should not have occurred and I apologise for it.

30. In paragraph 8 (SJM-069) [HIA 249] states that she was sent out to buy newspapers for [SR 253] and that this resulted in her being beaten with a stick later that day by [SR 237]. [HIA 249] also states that the next day she was forced to stand in school all day with her hands held up. [SR 253] did not live in the orphanage. She lived in the convent. It was very rare for children to be in the convent and I would never have seen any child in the convent bedroom. If [HIA 249] was punished by [SR 237] in the manner described then I totally condemn her actions and apologise for them. I can only refer to the records which record the offences and the punishment received. None of these support her contention that she was punished for carrying out instructions from [SR 253].

31. In relation to paragraph 9 and 10 (SJM-069 and SJM -070) [HIA 249] states that she started her periods when she was thirteen and that as a result of this she was beaten by one of the Sisters. Again, I cannot comment specifically as I was not there. However, my recollection is that there were not significant discussions or explanations about puberty or periods in the 1950s. When a girl did start her period she was given the appropriate girdle and sanitary towels. I believe that this would have been consistent with the discussions in most families in the 1940s/50s. It would be unacceptable to beat or punish any child for starting her period. I fully condemn beating a young girl on her back and bottom until she was tired.

32. In response to paragraph 10 (SJM-070) there is no evidence in the files that [HIA 249] ran away when she was thirteen. [HIA 249] was [HIA 249] in 1955. There is no evidence of any punishments in the punishment book at all for 1955 in relation to [HIA 249].

1 girls were slapped, however, in the home, because they
2 talked about it in the sewing room.

3 A. That's correct.

4 Q. You remember a particular chat about an incident where
5 two or three girls had absconded.

6 A. That's correct.

7 Q. You knew you that there had been slaps administered you
8 said at the bottom of the stairs, and again this was
9 just from something the girls were talking about in the
10 sewing room.

11 A. That's correct.

12 Q. I am going to turn to the name SR237, whom we have heard
13 about in the Inquiry.

14 A. Right.

15 Q. When you came in , she was in charge. She was
16 the manager at that stage.

17 A. That's correct, yes.

18 Q. She had taken over in . Now we have heard
19 complaints about her striking girls. I asked you: did
20 you ever witness that yourself?

21 A. No, I never witnessed SR237 striking anybody.

22 Q. At SJM -- again I don't think we need to call it up --
23 22923, paragraph 14, you accepted that SR237 could have
24 been strict with the girls.

25 A. That is true.

from the date she had entered the orphanage. I do recall that there was a story of SJM 27 sleeping in a cot at the end of SR 248 bed. SR 248 entered the Order in 1911 and spent most of her life in St Joseph's. She lived in the convent in Middletown until she died on

16. HIA 249 has named four other Sisters in paragraph 3 (SJM – 068) of her statement. SR 249 was in St Joseph's in 1958 when I arrived. She worked in the laundry room. I recall that she lived in the Immaculate dormitory. SR 250 retired in 1957 shortly before I arrived. I have absolutely no recollection of Sister SR 251 and we cannot trace any record of a Sister by this name. SR 252 was a primary school teacher. She was born in England.

17. HIA 249 alleges that SR 249 SR 250 SR 251 and Sister SR 252 beat her sister SJM 27 when she was older because of her relationship with SR 248. I am aware from a review of our historical documents that a punishment book was retained in St Joseph's. This recorded any punishment that was administered to the children and it was then submitted to the Northern Ireland Office and signed by an inspector.

18. I have annexed marked BD4 all the entries from the punishment book relating to SJM 27

- a) 23rd January 1953, Destruction of school property – deprived of sweets;
- b) 18th December 1954, Inattention in class – two slaps;
- c) 27th February 1955, Disobedient – deprived of sweets;
- d) 15th May 1955, Sulkiness – deprived of sweets;
- e) 14th November 1955, Impertinent – deprived of fruit;
- f) 26th May 1956, Disobedient – deprived of sweets;
- g) 18th January 1957, Sulkiness – two slaps;
- h) 22nd December 1957, Disobedient – one slap;
- i) 7th May 1958, Very bold – one slap;
- j) 24th July 1958, Disobedient – one slap;
- k) 15th October 1959, Mischievous and impertinent – two slaps; and
- l) 21st October 1960, Bold, disobedient and quarrelsome – two slaps.

19. If punishment was administered to SJM 27 as stated in paragraph 3 by HIA 249 and if it was not recorded then I would totally condemn such behaviour and apologise for it. The records that we have retained regarding the punishments that

PRIVATE

convent, SR248 was in charge of the children. She was a very gentle, kind person. She must have retired at some point though and SR237 took over. She was such a wicked woman. She hated me for some reason and blamed me if anything happened or even just for simple things like laughing. She beat me with a long narrow bamboo stick or slapped me almost every day.

3. I have a condition called [REDACTED] and I don't have the full use of my [REDACTED]. I felt very vulnerable in the convent because of this. I don't know if this is the reason SR237 singled me out but whatever the reason was she made my life there hell. We used to sleep in dormitories and there were fourteen or fifteen girls in the dormitory. SR237 slept in a cell within the dormitory and she made me sleep in a bed directly outside her cell. She had a little window in her cell and she peeped out of it periodically to see if anything was amiss. I remember being very small and hiding under my blankets at the sight of her. I felt she was watching me all the time. It was an awful thing to do to a child because I lived in fear of her.
4. SR237 punished me if she found any of the other girls misbehaving. When I was 9 or 10, I remember playing with another girl at bedtime and she tied my nightdress to the bed as a joke. We were laughing and joking around. SR237 came in and accused me of making all the noise. She told me to 'Get out of the bed until I tell you to get back in'. She punished me by making me kneel in the middle of the floor for the whole night. I didn't have a blanket but I don't remember that it was cold. I remember the dark and waking up as I fell forward because I kept falling asleep. We weren't even allowed to be children.
5. I remember on another occasion someone was smoking. I was very young about 10 or 11 and I didn't even know what a cigarette was. SR237 said 'I know who it is. HIA178 get up the stairs to that dormitory'. I told her it wasn't me but she didn't listen. She stripped all my clothes from me, bent me over the iron bed and beat me with a bamboo cane while another nun, SR254 I think her name was, held my hands. I didn't have the use of

PRIVATE

my right hand and there was no need to hold me down. She beat me black and blue up and down my back and my legs with the cane in front of the other girls. She bruised my skin but I don't remember it bleeding. After she finished beating me, she said 'Go and show those stripes to whoever you like.' She must have felt guilty afterwards because she had some sweets which she tried to give me but I refused to take them.

6. SR237 [REDACTED] also used to make demeaning remarks about my mother in front of the other girls. She told me that I would 'end up in jail like your mother' and also that 'she didn't want you and so we had to look after you'. She said these things on a daily basis to hurt me. I didn't know then that my mother had been in prison.
7. I always loved music. I was taught how to play the piano at St Joseph's by SR255 [REDACTED] and I was a member of the convent choir. On one occasion I went up to SR237 [REDACTED] and told her that I passed my music exam at school. I was so pleased to pass. It gave me a sense of achievement. She lifted her hand and slapped me across the face. I always felt that she singled me out and treated me worse than the other children.
8. The school and the part of the convent where we lived were within one big building. The nuns lived in a separate building within the convent grounds. Different nuns taught us in school and there were no lay teachers. The nuns who taught me would not normally have come to the part of the convent where we lived. SR256 [REDACTED] was one of my teachers. She was kind and protected me. She came down to the home one day after school and saw SR237 [REDACTED] hurrying me down the stairs. She was pushing me and saying 'Get down you'. She said to her 'Sister, I am going to complain to Reverend Mother about you'. SR237 [REDACTED] stopped pushing me on this occasion. She continued to abuse me though when no-one was around and this behaviour continued until the day I left the Convent. No-one ever intervened or did anything to stop it.

HIA Ref: 178
Witness Name: SR 235
Date: 5th February 2016

THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 – 1995

RULE 9 WITNESS STATEMENT OF
SR 254

I, SR 254 will say as follows:

1. I am a religious Sister. I make this statement in response to the request from the Inquiry for a Rule 9 statement in response to the statement of HIA 178 dated 8th January 2016 HIA reference 178.
2. My date of birth is [REDACTED] and at [REDACTED] years old my health is poor. As a child I suffered blood poisoning and developed septicaemia. I spent two years in hospital and this has left me with a lifelong deformity of my foot and leg. I have problems with mobility. I have low blood pressure, arthritis and anxiety. In the last three years I suffered an aneurysm.
3. I worked in St Joseph's for two years from 1960 – 1962. I was part of the house keeping staff and it was not my job to care for or discipline the children.
4. I have no recollection of HIA 178. In paragraph 5 (SJM 333-334) it states that I held HIA 178 hands as she was caned by SR 237. This did not happen. I did not witness or assist others to beat any child with a cane.
5. I am unable to comment any further in relation to the statement. I understand a more detailed response to this statement has been provided by SR 235.
6. I am distressed and upset by the statement of HIA 178 and I have read the statement with great sadness. I did not witness the excessive punishment of any child during my 2 years at St Joseph's.

PRIVATE

convent, SR248 was in charge of the children. She was a very gentle, kind person. She must have retired at some point though and SR237 took over. She was such a wicked woman. She hated me for some reason and blamed me if anything happened or even just for simple things like laughing. She beat me with a long narrow bamboo stick or slapped me almost every day.

3. I have a condition called [REDACTED] and I don't have the full use of my [REDACTED]. I felt very vulnerable in the convent because of this. I don't know if this is the reason SR237 singled me out but whatever the reason was she made my life there hell. We used to sleep in dormitories and there were fourteen or fifteen girls in the dormitory. SR237 slept in a cell within the dormitory and she made me sleep in a bed directly outside her cell. She had a little window in her cell and she peeped out of it periodically to see if anything was amiss. I remember being very small and hiding under my blankets at the sight of her. I felt she was watching me all the time. It was an awful thing to do to a child because I lived in fear of her.
4. SR237 punished me if she found any of the other girls misbehaving. When I was 9 or 10, I remember playing with another girl at bedtime and she tied my nightdress to the bed as a joke. We were laughing and joking around. SR237 came in and accused me of making all the noise. She told me to 'Get out of the bed until I tell you to get back in'. She punished me by making me kneel in the middle of the floor for the whole night. I didn't have a blanket but I don't remember that it was cold. I remember the dark and waking up as I fell forward because I kept falling asleep. We weren't even allowed to be children.
5. I remember on another occasion someone was smoking. I was very young about 10 or 11 and I didn't even know what a cigarette was. SR237 said 'I know who it is. HIA178 get up the stairs to that dormitory'. I told her it wasn't me but she didn't listen. She stripped all my clothes from me, bent me over the iron bed and beat me with a bamboo cane while another nun, SR254 I think her name was, held my hands. I didn't have the use of

1 forward, because I kept falling asleep."

2 You go on to say:

3 "We weren't even allowed to be children."

4 A. True.

5 Q. Now the congregation have said in their response
6 statement to the Inquiry that they accept that SR237 was
7 strict. She was a strict nun, but they don't think that
8 she would have made a child kneel all night in the way
9 you describe, HIA178.

10 A. She did. Yes, she did.

11 Q. You say that she blamed you --

12 A. For a lot things that I didn't do.

13 Q. You go on to talk about another occasion here,
14 paragraph 5, when someone was smoking. You say you were
15 very young, 10 or 11. You didn't even know what
16 a cigarette was. She came in -- obviously there had
17 been a smell of smoke or something like that.

18 "She came in and said, 'I know who it is. It's you,
19 HIA178. Get up the stairs to that dormitory'. I told
20 her it wasn't me but she didn't listen. She stripped
21 all my clothes from me. She bent me over the iron bed
22 and beat me with a bamboo cane while another nun ...".

23 who you name here. That's SR254, and you think it
24 was SR254.

25 A. That's right.

PRIVATE

my right hand and there was no need to hold me down. She beat me black and blue up and down my back and my legs with the cane in front of the other girls. She bruised my skin but I don't remember it bleeding. After she finished beating me, she said 'Go and show those stripes to whoever you like.' She must have felt guilty afterwards because she had some sweets which she tried to give me but I refused to take them.

6. SR237 [REDACTED] also used to make demeaning remarks about my mother in front of the other girls. She told me that I would 'end up in jail like your mother' and also that 'she didn't want you and so we had to look after you'. She said these things on a daily basis to hurt me. I didn't know then that my mother had been in prison.
7. I always loved music. I was taught how to play the piano at St Joseph's by SR255 [REDACTED] and I was a member of the convent choir. On one occasion I went up to SR237 [REDACTED] and told her that I passed my music exam at school. I was so pleased to pass. It gave me a sense of achievement. She lifted her hand and slapped me across the face. I always felt that she singled me out and treated me worse than the other children.
8. The school and the part of the convent where we lived were within one big building. The nuns lived in a separate building within the convent grounds. Different nuns taught us in school and there were no lay teachers. The nuns who taught me would not normally have come to the part of the convent where we lived. SR256 [REDACTED] was one of my teachers. She was kind and protected me. She came down to the home one day after school and saw SR237 [REDACTED] hurrying me down the stairs. She was pushing me and saying 'Get down you'. She said to her 'Sister, I am going to complain to Reverend Mother about you'. SR237 [REDACTED] stopped pushing me on this occasion. She continued to abuse me though when no-one was around and this behaviour continued until the day I left the Convent. No-one ever intervened or did anything to stop it.

PRIVATE

9. I never specifically told SR256 or anyone else that SR237 abused me. It was obvious to everyone who was in the convent at that time. I found out there was a nursing home for the sisters of nearby when I lived in In 2006 or 2007, I was in the town one day when I saw SR242 a nun I recognised from St Joseph's, walking in the street. I stopped her and asked her was SR237 in that home. She asked who I was and when I told her I was HIA178 she dropped her walking stick because she was so surprised. She put her arms around me to comfort me and said, 'Didn't she give you terrible beatings? Sure, I never done that'.

10. There was no-one from outside the convent I could complain to about the way I was treated. I did not have any family and no one came to see me regularly. I don't remember going to see a doctor but I do remember a dentist coming to the convent to look at our teeth. I remember being in hospital when I was very young but I can't remember why. Even if I had someone to complain to, no-one would have believed me at that time because people were inclined to trust the Sisters. There was a priest called Father SJM3₆ who came to the Convent occasionally. He would make general comments to us in passing for example, 'I hope you are behaving yourselves for the nuns'. He never asked us how we were. I remember once I was with a group of girls, and he slapped me on the face for no reason. I think he hit me just because I was the closest to him.

11. Occasionally we were given better clothes to wear and the nuns were nicer to us than usual. I know now that this was just because people from the government were inspecting us. These clothes were taken from us once the inspection was over. These inspections may have been every other year but I don't remember them as being frequent. We were not given a chance to talk to the Inspectors privately. We were given small treats like sweets or a Mars bar at birthdays or Christmas. I don't remember the nuns giving me any particular special treats on my birthday. At Christmas, we were also given a turkey dinner and we looked forward to it for months beforehand. The convent was near Castle Leslie in Monaghan and I remember on special occasions like Christmas and Easter, the nuns taking us on visits there for treasure hunts and

PRIVATE

9. I never specifically told SR256 or anyone else that SR237 abused me. It was obvious to everyone who was in the convent at that time. I found out there was a nursing home for the sisters of nearby when I lived in In 2006 or 2007, I was in the town one day when I saw SR242 a nun I recognised from St Joseph's, walking in the street. I stopped her and asked her was SR237 in that home. She asked who I was and when I told her I was HIA178 she dropped her walking stick because she was so surprised. She put her arms around me to comfort me and said, 'Didn't she give you terrible beatings? Sure, I never done that'.

10. There was no-one from outside the convent I could complain to about the way I was treated. I did not have any family and no one came to see me regularly. I don't remember going to see a doctor but I do remember a dentist coming to the convent to look at our teeth. I remember being in hospital when I was very young but I can't remember why. Even if I had someone to complain to, no-one would have believed me at that time because people were inclined to trust the Sisters. There was a priest called Father SJM3₆ who came to the Convent occasionally. He would make general comments to us in passing for example, 'I hope you are behaving yourselves for the nuns'. He never asked us how we were. I remember once I was with a group of girls, and he slapped me on the face for no reason. I think he hit me just because I was the closest to him.

11. Occasionally we were given better clothes to wear and the nuns were nicer to us than usual. I know now that this was just because people from the government were inspecting us. These clothes were taken from us once the inspection was over. These inspections may have been every other year but I don't remember them as being frequent. We were not given a chance to talk to the Inspectors privately. We were given small treats like sweets or a Mars bar at birthdays or Christmas. I don't remember the nuns giving me any particular special treats on my birthday. At Christmas, we were also given a turkey dinner and we looked forward to it for months beforehand. The convent was near Castle Leslie in Monaghan and I remember on special occasions like Christmas and Easter, the nuns taking us on visits there for treasure hunts and

STATEMENT OF WITNESS

STATEMENT OF:

SJM 59

Name

Rank

AGE OF WITNESS (if over 18 enter "over 18"): OVER 18

TO BE COMPLETED
WHEN THE
STATEMENT HAS
BEEN WRITTEN

I declare that this statement consisting of _____ pages, each signed by me is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in evidence at a preliminary enquiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable to prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it anything which I know to be false or do not believe to be true.

Dated this 2nd day of June 2004

SJM 59

statement was recorded or received

PRINT NAME IN CAPS

I want someone to write down what I have to say as I was abused a long number of years ago when I was in St Joseph's Home, St Louis Convent, Middletown. There were firstly three other girls in the home I don't really know why I was put in there but the nuns used to say it was because I looked like my dad and seemingly he was no good. I went to St Joseph's when I was 9 years old in 1954. I had been in another home from I was 3 until 9, but cannot recall any problems there. The home was run by the nuns of St Louis which is a French order. The home was in the grounds of the convent and there was also the school. I went to the school along with the day girls from the village and surrounding area. In the home I slept in a dormitory along with about 20 other girls. The name of it was The Sacred Heart. On the wall was a great big picture of the Sacred Heart. I was there about 4 days when I experienced my first piece of physical abuse. One morning at breakfast which

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 59 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 1

consisted of porridge first, then bread, margarine and tea. I passed my porridge to [REDACTED] and was caught by a nun named [REDACTED] SR 237. She was the head nun over me in the children's home. When she saw me do this she went crazy punching me about the ears and head. I didn't like the porridge as it was lumpy and she demanded I ate it. I could feel my stomach churn. [REDACTED] SR 237 told me to open my mouth, hold my nose closed and started to shovel the porridge into my mouth. I was choking as she was doing it so fast and I actually vomited and she fed me the vomit which she had scraped off my clothes. She kept telling me that my mother was too poor to buy porridge, I never had decent food and who did I think I was, I was nothing but the devil's spawn. This incident was witnessed by all the other girls. Any sort of punishment had to be done publicly in front of all the other girls. This would have normally been done in the evening after the last meal at about 6.00pm. We were lined up around the walls of the room where we had our food and were called out for punishment if we had done something wrong during the day. A typical day in the home was I got up at 5.30am, knelt at the side of my bed for prayers, then got washed, dressed, there were curtains around every bed in the dormitory. I then had proper prayers in front of the Sacred Heart. After them I had to make my bed in a certain way

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 59

STATEMENT PAGE NO: 2

everything was folded neatly on the bed. My nightdress which was long and blue and white stripe was placed under the pillow. There then followed the ritual cleaning of the dormitory and all the other rooms. This was carried out before Mass and had to be done in silence. The silence had to be observed from 8.30 PM the previous evening. After Mass I came back to the room for breakfast and after breakfast more chores. At about five to nine I was lined up with other girls for school. School was good, there was no abuse there, it was run by [REDACTED] SR 256. For lunch it was back to the home and then back to school. School finished at 3.30 pm and then I helped clean the school. When that was done, it was back to the home. There followed more chores if it was raining but if it was good I got for a walk. Another incident I vividly remember was at a mealtime. There were 4 girls to a table, we each had our own cutlery which was numbered - it consisted of a knife, fork, dessertspoon, soup spoon, butter knife, teaspoon, cup, saucer and plate. Mine was number 27. In the middle of the table was a large plastic bowl full of water. This was used to wash our cutlery in. The dirty water from this bowl was then put into a slop bucket which was on a sewing table at the bottom of the room. This particular evening [REDACTED] SR 271 called me to empty one of the buckets which was heavy and awkward to get off the table. When I lifted the bucket down some of

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 59 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 3

water splashed onto the floor. [REDACTED] SR 271 started shouting at me which made me more nervous as I was really frightened of her. Someone else was called to take the bucket from me. [REDACTED] SR 271 then wrestled me to the floor of the room and started to punch and kick me. She also made me suck up as much of the water as I could while she held me by the hair pushing my head and face into the dirty water. While she was doing this she kept calling me the devil's child. Another occasion I remember needing new shoes and given a pair that were men's shoes. These shoes were too big and on that particular day I was going out for a walk. I was heading towards steps and said to [REDACTED] SR 237 that I couldn't walk in them. I was crying. The next thing I know [REDACTED] SR 237 had given me a really hard punch on the back and I ended up falling down some steps. When I got up the skin was off my knee and there was a lot of blood. [REDACTED] SR 238 took me to a hospital in Armagh where I had stitches put in. Yet another occasion was when I had a loose tooth and [REDACTED] SR 271 had put a piece of string around it and tied it to a door knob to pull it out, I was crying and said to her I would wiggle it out myself. She lost her temper with me and threw me over the banisters. I must have fell about 10 feet and I was badly bruised and hurt my back. After that I spent about 2 weeks in the infirmary. On an occasion

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 69 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 4

at a mealtime I had been given a lamb sausage. When I stuck my fork into it, it skidded off the plate. [REDACTED] SR 271 saw this and she came at me with a knife which actually cut my nose. Another time when I was told to prepare beelroot, I didn't know that it had to be run under water, so I started to peel it and it bled. [REDACTED] SR 271 again saw this and she took a knife, cut my finger and told me she would make me bleed. There were numerous other times when I punched, kicked or generally abused by [REDACTED] SR 271 during my stay in the home from 1954 until 1961. I left the home when I was 16 years old. To continue with my story, there were numerous times that I was in the infirmary for various injuries. [REDACTED] SR 238 would have been in charge of the sick in the infirmary. While in there the normal clothes worn was a long white night shirt and I wasn't allowed to wear underpants. It didn't matter what sort of a problem I had [REDACTED] SR 238 always used like a yellow ointment which she seemed to spread it anywhere. There was only ever one patient in it at the time and the infirmary was next door to the dormitory. [REDACTED] SR 238 sexually abused me on a number of occasions. When she was taking my temperature she always would have put the thermometer up my bottom. While it was there [REDACTED] SR 238 would have put her fingers into my vagina. When she was doing this I was absolutely terrified but

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 59 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 5

couldn't do anything or say anything to anyone or I would have got another beating. I think the worst times that [REDACTED] SR 238 abused me was just at the end of my periods. I was only allowed 5 sanitary towels. These sanitary towels were parts of sheets made up to look like a sanitary towel. They were washed and used again and again. Again ~~to~~ my number was ^{on} them and I got the same overboard. Because I only had 5 towels and I had heavy periods by the end of my period I would have been sore and chaffed and ended up in the infirmary for treatment. This is when [REDACTED] SR 238 would have used her yellow cream. She would have rubbed it in the inside of my legs and then would have put her finger into my vagina. While she was doing she she would have sort of creamed and she also would have been rubbing herself against my bed and sort of doing circular movements with her pelvis. [REDACTED] SR 238 would never have asked me to touch her. [REDACTED] SR 238 would also have put her finger up my bottom, she would have told me to lie on my side and I was so scared that I didn't argue. The same thing happened everytime I was in the infirmary. When [REDACTED] SR 238 made me go on my side she would always have put her clenched fists between my knees which meant that my legs would have been slightly open when I was on my side. Sometimes while in the infirmary overnight [REDACTED] SR 238 ~~would~~ would have come

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 59 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 6

in and got into bed beside me. She would have done the same misreading of the finger. She would not have undressed except for her dressing gown. Whilst I stayed in the home my mother would have visited very infrequently. I can recall telling her about being physically hurt but she called me a liar. I have never disclosed this information to anyone until now as this statement is written. Through all my years in the home the abuse remained much the same. I never could seem to do right for wrong. I never know what was going to trigger their temper and then I would get a beating then end up in the infirmary where the sexual abuse went on. I remember the day I left, there was a lady called [REDACTED] SJM 22 came and collected me to start a job. I stayed in her house overnight and was taken to my job the next day. My first job was with a [REDACTED] who lived on the [REDACTED]. I left the home on 1st June, 1961 and never returned.

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN

We inspected this School on 20th December, 1952. On that date there were 30 girls in the Training School, 22 Junior and 8 Senior. 5 Juniors and 2 Seniors were admitted during the year, and 6 Juniors and 4 Seniors discharged. There was no instance of absconding.

General Health

All the children seen looked well and happy. There has been no outbreak of infectious illness. The new Medical Record cards are now in use.

Buildings and Equipment

The premises were in good order throughout. Some painting has been done on the hall and stairways, so that the whole place looks very bright and clean. The laundry facilities have been much improved, especially for drying the clothes. The concrete area and drive have been repaired.

Activities

We have been very much impressed on our visits by the high standards reached in all departments, both in work and leisure activities. The bigger girls are not kept too long at one job, changing from kitchen in the morning to sewing-room in the afternoon, for example. The work in music, dancing etc. is excellent. Miss Forrest was particularly impressed on an earlier visit by the percussion band, which was conducted by an older girl, and in which even the youngest child (a 4-year old voluntary girl) could join, and did, with obvious enjoyment.

After-care

The new system of after-care by ^{Miss} ~~SJM 22~~ appears to be working well, and the staff are well satisfied with the results. ~~SJM 22~~ is able to visit the girls regularly and also to visit the School so as to get to know her future charges.

General

The standards of care and training in this School remain excellent. It is evident that all the Sisters have the children's interests very much at heart. (We inspected and signed the statutory books, which were up to date.) The punishment book shows a very occasional record of 2 slaps or 4 slaps, but mainly punishment is by deprivation of privileges. In general the impression is one of firmness and kindness in the right proportions.

Norman J. Simpson
Kathleen B. Foster

31st December, 1952.

St. Joseph's Training School

Return of Corporal Punishment for Q.E. 31/12/1955

- JAN 1956

Date	Name	Offence	Nature of Punishment	By whom Inflicted.
6.10.55	[REDACTED]	Sulky & Disobedient.	Deprived of Pocket Money.	Manager.
12.10.55	[REDACTED]	Untidy & Impertinent.	Reprimanded & Deprived of Sweets.	"
20.10.55	[REDACTED]	Troublesome.	Two Slaps	"
28.10.55	[REDACTED]	Insolent	Deprived of Pocket Money.	"
4.11.55	[REDACTED] SJM 27	Disobedient.	Deprived of Fruit.	"
10.11.55	[REDACTED]	Idle in Class.	One Slap Made apologise.	"
14.11.55	[REDACTED]	Impertinent	Reprimanded and made apologise.	"
28.11.55	[REDACTED]	Sulky and Bad Tempered.	Reprimanded and made apologise.	"
4.12.55	[REDACTED]	Sulky and work ill done.	Reprimanded. Made apologise and repeat work.	"
11.12.55	[REDACTED]	Quarrelsome.	Reprimanded and Deprived of Pocket Money.	"
16.12.55	[REDACTED]	Forward	Deprived of Sweets	"
22.12.55	[REDACTED]	Impertinent & Quarrelsome.	Deprived of Money and made apologise.	"
27.12.55	[REDACTED]	Troublesome & Quarrelsome.	Reprimanded and Deprived of Pocket Money.	"

[REDACTED] Manager

100

St. Joseph's

(Name of Training School)

W.364

RETURN OF CORPORAL PUNISHMENT IMPOSED

DURING THE QUARTER ENDED 31 March 1957

(To be furnished to the Ministry of Home Affairs, Children's Branch, Stormont, Belfast, during the first week succeeding the end of the quarter to which it refers.)

Name of Training School (1)	Date (2)	Name and age of Child or Young Person Punished		Offence (5)	Nature of Punishment - if a cane is used the number of strokes and the part of the body on which it is applied should be stated. (6)	By Whom Inflicted (7)	Remarks (8)
		Name (3)	Age (4)				
St. Joseph's	10.1.57	HIA 178	9	Disobedient	Deprived of Fruit .	Manager.	
	18.1.57	SJM 21		Sulkiness	2 Slaps	"	
	25.1.57	SJM 102	13	Impertinence	Deprived of Pastry.	"	
	7.2.57		15	Work badly done	Reprimanded and mad repeat it.	"	
	16.2.57		16	Impertinence	Made apologise publicly.	"	
	19.2.57		16	Impertinence	Made apologise publicly.	"	
	26.2.57		14	Disobedient	Deprived of Sweets	"	
	5.3.57		16	& Destructive	& Two Slaps.	"	
	12.3.57		13	Work badly done	Deprived of Mark Money.	"	
	20.3.57		14	Sulkiness	Two Slaps.	"	
				Disagreeable in manner,	Deprived of Entertainment.	"	
	28.3.57		11	Impertinence	Two Slaps.	"	

NOTE: If no punishments were inflicted during the quarter a "nil" return should be furnished to the Ministry on the form provided for that purpose.

In each case where corporal punishment has been imposed due regard has been paid to the Rules and Regulations governing the Administration of such punishment.

H.A.9/5/200/5/56.

(Signature of Manager or other responsible officer.)

Manager (Designation) 31. 3. 57 (Date)

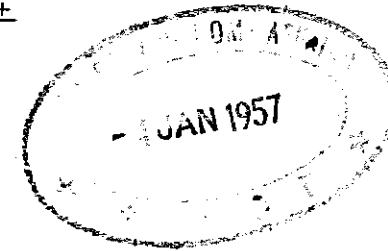
96

St. Joseph's

(Name of Training School)

W.364

RETURN OF CORPORAL PUNISHMENT IMPOSED
DURING THE QUARTER ENDED



(To be furnished to the Ministry of Home Affairs, Children's Branch, Stormont, Belfast,
during the first week succeeding the end of the quarter to which it refers.)

Name of Training School	Date	Name and age of Child or Young Person Punished		Offence	Nature of Punishment - if a cane is used the number of strokes and the part of the body on which it is applied should be stated.	By Whom Inflicted	Remarks
		Name	Age				
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
St. Joseph's	12.10.'56	[REDACTED]	14	Disobedient	Two Slapson hands	Manager	
St. Joseph's	24.10.'56	[REDACTED]	16	& Indifferent			
"	3.11.'56	HIA 178	8	Very Insolent.	Deprived of Pocket	"	
"	10.11.'56	[REDACTED]	15	Told Lies	Money.	"	
"	17.11.'56	[REDACTED]	15	Impertinent	Deprived of Sweets.	"	
"	20.11.'56	[REDACTED]	15	Work badly	Made apologise	"	
"				done.	Made do it all	"	
"				Stealing	over again.	"	
"	12.10.56	[REDACTED]	13	Disobedient	Severely repriman	"	
"	6.12.56	[REDACTED]	12	& Indifferent.	-ded. Deprived	"	
"	12.12.56	[REDACTED]	13	Neglect of	of Pocket Money.	"	This was her 2nd
"	27.12.56	[REDACTED]	16	Duty.	Two slaps on hands	"	
				Impertinence	" "	"	
				Deprived of Rastry		"	
				Abseonded	Had her hair cut.	"	

NOTE: If no punishments were inflicted during the quarter a "nil" return should be furnished to the Ministry on the form provided for that purpose.

In each case where corporal punishment has been imposed due regard has been paid to the Rules and Regulations governing the Administration of such punishment.

(Signature of Manager or other responsible officer.)

H.A.9/5/200/5/56.

Manager (Designation) 31. 12. '56. (Date)

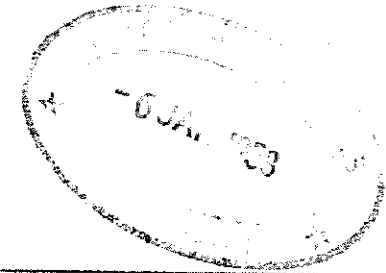
St. Joseph's (Name of Training School)

W.364

RETURN OF CORPORAL PUNISHMENT IMPOSED

DURING THE QUARTER ENDED 31st December, 1957.

(To be furnished to the Ministry of Home Affairs, Children's Branch, Stormont, Belfast, during the first week succeeding the end of the quarter to which it refers.)



Name of Training School	Date	Name and age of Child or Young Person Punished		Offence	Nature of Punishment - if a cane is used the number of strokes and the part of the body on which it is applied should be stated.	By Whom Inflicted	Remarks
		Name	Age				
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
St. Joseph's	7.10.57		17	Troublesome & Impertinent.	Deprived of Pocket Money for a week.	Manager.	
	12.10.57		17	Rude and Disobedient	Deprived of Sweets and made apologise.	"	
	17.10.57		14	Destructive	One Slap on Hand and made pay a little of cost of article injured.	"	
	22.10.57	HIA 178	9	Very Bold	One Slap on hand	"	
	29.10.57		17	Impertinent	Deprived of Outing	"	
	4.11.57		17	Insolent	Reprimanded	"	
	15.11.57		17	Impertinent & Disobedient	Reprimanded and Deprived of Pocket Money.	"	
	22.11.57		17	Very Impertinent and abusive.	Advised and warned of what the consequences could be.	"	

NOTE: If no punishments were inflicted during the quarter a "nil" return should be furnished to the Ministry on the form provided for that purpose.

In each case where corporal punishment has been imposed due regard has been paid to the Rules and Regulations governing the Administration of such punishment.

SR 237

(Signature of Manager or other responsible officer.)

H.A.9/5/200/5/56.

Manager

(Designation) 31st December (Date)

1 and gave you a black eye.

2 A. She did.

3 Q. You were explaining to me that you -- do you want to
4 just explain to the Panel in your own words what you had
5 said in the corridor that caused her to react the way
6 she did?

7 A. Well, I was kind of ranting and raving and saying, "Oh,
8 she's not going to hit me", you know, sort of thing, and
9 she got angry and she just turned and she just went like
10 that right into my eye. (Gesturing.)

11 Q. So when you say, "She is not going to hit me", you were
12 referring to SR237?

13 A. That's it, yes. She wasn't going to cane me basically.

14 Q. She was in her office caning perhaps somebody else --

15 A. She was, yes.

16 Q. -- and you are -- if I describe it as being rebellious,
17 is that a fair way of describing it?

18 A. In some ways I think I was like angry. You know, it is
19 hard to explain. I just said, "Well, you know, I want
20 justice", you know, sort of thing and "She's not going
21 to slap me", you know, waving my head and she just
22 turned round and went bang into my eye, and then I went
23 in and got caned as well.

24 CHAIRMAN: Just so we can have this written down, what you
25 are saying is you were punched with a fist.

Remarks on the Case.

Punishment.

By whom Reported

OFFENSE.

NAME.

Date.

24.8.1964	[REDACTED]	Abandoned		6 Slaps on hands	
24.8.1964	[REDACTED]	Abandoned		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Insulted and threatened		4 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Bold defiant and went backhanded		4 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Very defiant bold and insubordinate		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Disrespectful, hostile and defiant		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	
24.10.1964	[REDACTED]	Left the premises		6 Slaps on hands	

HIA 203

1 evidence she genuinely cared for your welfare in that
2 she didn't have to do it, but went and did this and got
3 you into somewhere to live, because there was
4 difficulties in the family --

5 A. That's right.

6 Q. -- that I am not going to go into.

7 A. Yes.

8 Q. You were saying to me that she wasn't always a harsh
9 person with you.

10 A. No, no, no. She wasn't. I mean, in most cases she was
11 pretty fair, but there was occasions where if you tried
12 to tell her something, she didn't always believe what
13 you were saying. You know, like in my case like being
14 sick and all, she didn't believe it when I was telling
15 her.

16 Q. So that was SR242 and SR237 --

17 A. And SR237, yes.

18 Q. -- who you felt didn't really -- we will come to that
19 very shortly. So your experiences with SR237 weren't
20 all bad.

21 A. No.

22 Q. In paragraph 11 of your statement, if we go to 055,
23 please, you explain about this medical issue of having
24 the mumps.

25 A. That's right.

1 A. Oh, yes.

2 Q. -- that have been -- and I think when I was discussing
3 this with you, you were explaining to me that it wasn't
4 the case that the nuns were hitting you all day, every
5 day. That's not the way life was.

6 A. Oh, no, no. We had some really great nuns. You know
7 what I mean? Some of them were obnoxious, you know, but
8 --

9 Q. So just like normal life. You get on with some people.
10 You don't get on with other people.

11 A. Yes, that's right.

12 Q. But it wasn't the case they were being physically
13 abusive to you all the time.

14 A. No, not really, no.

15 Q. You do describe in paragraph 9 of your statement at 055
16 a particular occasion whenever in the summer you were
17 being made eat salad and you were -- had beetroot put on
18 your plate. You didn't want to eat the beetroot.

19 A. Yes.

20 Q. You don't remember which nun this was, but the nun
21 forced the beetroot into your mouth.

22 A. That's right. She did.

23 Q. What SR240 has said to the Inquiry is it would be quite
24 wrong for any child to be force fed. She wasn't there
25 at the time. So she can't speak to this specific event,

1 A. She was the head of the -- yes.

2 Q. She retired after you left. She retired in and she
3 died in . You explain here that you all
4 had to be in the band and do Irish dancing.

5 A. That's right.

6 Q. You didn't want to do dancing. You had two left feet.

7 A. Yes.

8 Q. Then learn an instrument. You were hit with a ruler or
9 a cane, but when we were talking about that earlier,
10 what you were explaining to me was you had to learn
11 an instrument.

12 A. We had to learn an instrument, yes.

13 Q. They tried to teach you the piano --

14 A. Yes.

15 Q. -- and the -- you mentioned Sister SR269 who taught
16 music --

17 A. She was the music teacher.

18 Q. -- and said she was lovely.

19 A. Oh, yes, she was lovely.

20 Q. When the piano wasn't working out, they gave you
21 an accordion to learn.

22 A. They tried me with the accordion. That didn't work
23 either.

24 Q. Then you had a go on the drums.

25 A. The drums. No good.

6. In paragraph 31 (SJM-010) HIA 161 states that girls were in St Joseph's because their parents could not cope with them or because they had been sent there by the criminal Courts. St Joseph's Training School generally accepted girls between the ages of 12 and 17 years. Girls were admitted via the Court system. On occasions, girls under the age of 12 would be admitted to St Joseph's, but this was rare. To my knowledge, the youngest resident was 11. Girls were sent by the Courts to St Joseph's for a variety of reasons. Some had committed criminal offences such as shoplifting or having been carried in a stolen car. However, a referral for a criminal offence was not the main reason for referral. Most girls were referred by the Courts via their own social workers, who considered that the girls were a risk either to themselves, or to others and needed a safe place to reside. Children who were out of control in other residential facilities, or were beyond the control of their parents, had been expelled from school, or if they had physically harmed themselves or others would be admitted to St Joseph's by the Courts.
7. In paragraph 31 (SJM-010) HIA 161 states that when she arrived at Middletown, there was a girl in a bath being scrubbed with a deck scrubber. The girls in St Joseph's were teenagers. Although I was not in charge of St Joseph's at the time, I have no recollection of any of the nuns having to bath any of the girls. The girls dealt with their own hygiene.
8. HIA 161 states that she was often bullied by other children, that she did not mix well or make friends. I can find no entries in either our log books or our daily diaries to either accept or deny these allegations. HIA 161 states that the abuse in Middletown was awful and that she expected it in a remand home but not in an orphanage. I am unclear if she is suggesting that St Joseph's was a remand home or the orphanage. However, in any event, St Joseph's was a training school. We did not permit bullying and we always discouraged fighting and arguments between the children.
9. I am pleased to note HIA 161 has fond memories of SR 239 who was also a qualified nurse and provided care in St Joseph's. HIA 161 has negative memories of SR 238. She claims that SR 238 slapped, beat and punched her regularly. HIA 161 was 14 years old when she was admitted to St Joseph's. At this age, it is likely she would have been in the Immaculate dormitory. We have no record to confirm which Sister was in charge of the Immaculate dormitory. It is possible that SR 239 was responsible for this dormitory at some point. If HIA 161 was

1 scrubbed. It wasn't -- it wasn't that they did it out
2 of a normal routine. This would be because they jumped
3 into bed with somebody else or it may be, you know, they
4 had done something and they would be taken away to be --
5 it was very firm that, you know, you wouldn't get into
6 heaven unless you were clean. The way to be clean was
7 Jeyes Fluid and scrubbing, you know. That's the only
8 way I can describe it. It was pretty frightening.

9 Q. You talk in paragraph 31 here about the girls and you
10 say that your sister made friends easily but you didn't
11 mix well with people and didn't trust many people and
12 you were often bullied. You say the abuse in Middletown
13 was awful but for some reason you say you expect that in
14 a remand home but you don't expect it in an orphanage.
15 So you were -- can I put it this way: you were more
16 accepting of the behaviour in Middletown than you had
17 been in Nazareth House. Would that be ...?

18 A. I was more accepting, because I knew that most people in
19 Middletown were there because other people couldn't
20 handle them, because it was a remand home and not
21 an orphanage. I took that to be a different --
22 a different kind of thing, that we weren't put in there
23 because we were orphans; we were put in there because we
24 were troubled. Yes. I mean, I don't know whether it is
25 true or not, but I took it to be a different ...

PRIVATE

her about the ill-treatment as I knew she would report it back to the nuns. In my eyes she was a nun without a habit.

30. Not only did we have physical abuse in the home but mental also. It was humiliating and degrading. We were made line up and show the nuns the gussets of our underwear. If it was dirty or marked we were punished. When a girl took her period it was never explained to her and asking for a sanitary towel was a procedure.

Middletown Remand Home (In/around 1967 – In/around 1970)

31. We were in with the criminal element at Middletown so you had to watch your back. The nuns there were also horrendous. I recall when I arrived I heard screaming as some girl was in the bath being scrubbed with a deck scrubber, cleanliness was next to godliness and I remember that screaming and thinking to myself that I had gone from bad to worse. The girls were in there because either their parents could not cope with them or they had been sent by the criminal court so you had to watch your back in case they attacked you or stole your belongings from right under your nose. My sister made friends easily but I did not mix well with people and did not trust many people. I was often bullied. The abuse in Middletown was awful but for some reason you expect that in a remand home but you do not expect it in an orphanage.

SR239 [REDACTED] was a young nun there and she was nice to us but SR238 [REDACTED] was another nightmare. I was in her dormitory and you got slapped, beaten and punched by her regularly. There was no-one I could think of in life that I could have gone to for help, no-one who would have believed me or done anything for me.

32. We also tried to run away from Middletown but it was out in the sticks so it was harder to run away and you had to keep to the fields. On one occasion we ran away with the help of the other girls who all tied their bed sheets together to make a rope that we could use. We got as far as Derry and met a guy called [REDACTED] who had escaped from borstal. He put me in touch with [REDACTED] SJM 99 [REDACTED] who was an up and coming MP then. She listened to my story and I begged her not to send me back to the home but

beaten, slapped or punched by SR 238 then I had no knowledge of it. If I had witnessed such behaviour I would have put a stop to it. My recollection of Sister SR 238 goes back to my first days at St Joseph's. She was small and slight and affectionately referred to by some of the girls as "Wee SR 238." Even if HIA 161 felt she was not able to complain, as there were approximately eleven other girls in the dormitory, I would have expected someone else to raise the complaint.

10. The diary logs confirm that on 28th March HIA 161 and SJM 23 were taken by SR 237 and SR 239 to the dentist in Armagh. After the dentist, they went shopping to buy plants. The diary also confirms that on 13th April 1969 HIA 161 was taken to hospital by ambulance at 10pm. She returned on 16th April. On 2nd May 1969 SR 239 took HIA 161 to the hospital for an x-ray. I have attached all relevant entries from the daily diaries, which I have marked 'CM2'.
11. In relation to paragraph 32 (SJM-010) our records confirm that on 1st November 1970, HIA 161 and another girl called SJM 88 absconded from the Immaculate dormitory. The police in Tynan, Armagh, Omagh and Belfast were informed. We then discovered that there was a possibility that they had travelled to Derry. The Police in Derry were contacted but they informed us that it was not safe for them to enter the Bogside area to search for them. The records confirm that SR 239 (otherwise known as SR 239) and I travelled to Derry to see if we could find them. At about 10.30pm that evening, St Joseph's received a call from a SJM 98 who confirmed that she had come across two girls who had absconded from Middletown. The note suggests that HIA 161 was scared to return to Middletown in case she was sent to a borstal. SJM 70 was a local priest and he subsequently telephoned to say that SJM 99 had contacted him and that the girls would come back if she could accompany them. We agreed to this proposal but when they failed to turn up SJM 70 agreed to go to SJM 99 home in Cookstown and pick them up. HIA 161 and SJM 88 returned at between 5am and 6am. The record confirms that the following day we had to obtain a statement from the two girls on times and routes taken. The police wanted to interview them about a break in at a house in Middletown. I have attached all relevant entries from the log books marked 'CM3'.
12. Our diaries confirm that at about 1.20pm on 16th November 1970 HIA 161 and five other girls, including her sister SJM 23 absconded. The police were called and the girls were returned to Middletown. HIA 161 was returned to Middletown around 4pm.

1 might have been slightly built or whatever. It didn't
2 stop her with the stick. It didn't stop her lashing out
3 and hitting.

4 I remember falling asleep, and as I fell asleep, my
5 arms would fall away. I wasn't crossed. I actually
6 woke up to her slapping me: "Get your arms up, HIA161.
7 Get then up and get them ...", and you would wake up and
8 try and cross them. This was in front of the whole
9 dormitory.

10 Q. SR240 in her response statement has said that, you know,
11 she would have expected some of the other girls in the
12 dormitory to have raised a complaint about the treatment
13 that you were experiencing.

14 A. No. You wouldn't raise a complaint. You wouldn't,
15 because you'd know how it would be accepted and you
16 would be afraid.

17 Q. You go on here to say that you also tried to run away
18 from Middletown, but it was out in the styx. So it was
19 harder to run away and you had to keep to the fields.

20 Now I am going to come back to this in a moment, but
21 just in terms of what the records show, they show you
22 and [name redacted] -- your sister, I should say, going
23 to the dentist in Armagh. Do you remember that?

24 A. No.

25 Q. There was also an entry about you going to the hospital

1 came up and you were talking to me earlier about her.

2 A. Uh-huh.

3 Q. Just perhaps if you can remember what -- say what you
4 can remember about her.

5 A. Just that she was very strict. Her punishments were
6 basically the same as back in Nazareth House. It was
7 the cane, you know, and having to stand for hours and
8 own up to something that you didn't do. You know, you
9 would have been called a liar and a liar until you
10 actually said something and owned up to it just to get
11 out of it, but then you would get punished anyway.

12 SR237 had it in for us really from the letters from
13 Nazareth House. She was set on whatever Nazareth House
14 was saying it must be true. We must have the devil in
15 us, and so the [name redacted] weren't going to get away
16 with a thing. Basically that's what we understood.

17 Other nuns -- like I say, I mean, most of the nuns
18 were very similar, but the ones who would have to deal
19 with you, like **SR 271** **SR 274** , SR256, all
20 of them were abusive.

21 We didn't have much to do with SR240. I don't
22 remember much abuse from her, but then again we
23 weren't -- you know, she would have been there if we
24 were going out for walks or doing something. She would
25 have been in, you know, doing that.

Nov. 2nd

The girls had a late sleep as there was no "school." In the afternoon [redacted] SR 240 took the group to games. The girls played well and seemed to have enjoyed themselves. Supper was early as Frank was to show a film "The Dan of the Sixth Happiness" at 7.30. Everyone enjoyed the film.

The girls who had come home for weekend returned: [redacted] SJM 90 (cousin in [redacted])

[redacted] SJM 91

[redacted] SJM 92

[redacted] SJM 93

[redacted] SJM 94

[redacted] SJM 95

[redacted] SJM 95

Neway for [redacted] but [redacted] went to out playing since the early afternoon and her mother couldn't find her. Sister told [redacted] that she would be back for [redacted] at 9 a.m. Tuesday. [redacted] SJM 89 and [redacted] SJM 90 wrote a statement.

Since they admitted to having spoken in a derogatory manner of school to [redacted] and [redacted] they were asked to write out the memo here, etc.

The police were informed that the girls were back. Already police asked us

13. In paragraph 32 (SJM -011) HIA 161 states that she informed SJM 99 that she had canes and sticks broken over her all the time. Apart from the reference to SR 238 (paragraph 32 SJM010) HIA 161 does not give the names of the individuals who she claims perpetrated this abuse. There is no record in the logs of any such abuse. When HIA 161 returned from the first incident on 1st November she was interviewed by the Police. After the second incident her sister and two others were found to have stolen clothes and they were also interviewed by the Police. There is no mention of any other punishment. There was no link between these two attempts to run away and HIA 161 leaving Middletown. HIA 161 was due for discharge at the end of 1971 so it was natural for attempts to be made in the months before this date to find suitable employment.
14. On 9th January 1971, HIA 161 was taken to Omagh Hospital for observation. On 14th November 1971, SR 270 and her sister SJM 23 went to Omagh to visit HIA 161. She had already been discharged from hospital so I presume she was staying in Omagh with a relative. HIA 161 had an Aunt who lived in Omagh. On 17th February 1971 HIA 161 was interviewed by the Licensing Committee. The Licensing Committee was a review committee made up of two Board members and three or four external professionals who were responsible for reviewing girls two or three months before they were due for release. The remit of the Licensing Committee was to interview each girl, relevant members of staff from St Joseph's to ensure sufficient preparation had been made to enable her to transfer from care. In particular, the Committee would have focused on what job opportunities and accommodation was available to her and what further support could be given to her so that she could be released on license. It was confirmed that she could be licenced for discharge as soon as a suitable job became available. By this date HIA 161 was 16 years old. HIA 161 was taken to hospital by SR 239 on this date to have her eyes cauterised.
15. On 3rd March 1971, it is noted that HIA 161 and SJM 23 were going to Omagh for the weekend. They got the bus from [redacted] on 4th March and returned on 7th March. I presume they were staying with the Aunt referred to in paragraph 33 of HIA 161 statement.
16. It is recorded on 9th March 1971 that the [redacted] did not want HIA 161 or [redacted] to visit them in Omagh again. SJM 3 who was a social worker and employee of St Joseph's agreed to contact the [redacted] and discuss the matter. It was also proposed that they ask the [redacted] to allow HIA 161 and SJM 23 to go for St Patricks'

5. I remember [redacted] SJM 4 or [redacted] SJM 4 as she was known as then. She was in house 1. In house 3 I remember a woman called [redacted] I can't remember her proper name. There were other staff members too. They were all fine. Some of the staff were Social Work Students and were all female.
6. I can remember [redacted], [redacted], [redacted], [redacted], [redacted], [redacted] and [redacted]. They would have been in house 1 with me. In house 3 I remember [redacted], [redacted], [redacted] and [redacted]. [redacted] Most of the girls are living around Newry, ^{and Belfast} now. [redacted]
7. In St. Joseph's I got up in the morning around 7.30/8am. I had breakfast and I went to school. I did my chores. We were given different chores each week. Once we did our chore that was it. We were never forced to do chores or made clean to all day. It was exactly the same as what we would have done at home. The Sisters taught us a lot. At the weekends the Sisters would come over and do the points system. We got to do our own thing at the weekends. I remember going roller skating in the gym.
8. There was a points system in St. Joseph's. We were each given a certain number of points at the beginning of the week. Depending on how good we were during the week, we would have gained or lost points. I think we needed 80 points by the end of the week to be allowed home. If we were close to 80 the Sisters would have given us a few extra points just so that we got home to see our family. They were very good like that.
9. If we misbehaved we would not be given a cigarette. I never witnessed any beatings or hitting. A few times I remember girls needing to be restrained because they were fighting with each other. The Sisters tried to protect us. A lot happened outside of St. Joseph's which affected the girls, including myself. It was those things that were the cause of what went on and anger was taken out on the staff. The Sisters were

never violent towards us. They were an authority figure but were never aggressive. If there was an issue the Sisters would try and talk it out and separate the girls.

10. I ran away from St. Joseph's on numerous occasions. I was not running away because I disliked St Joseph's but because I was going to protests. I was involved in Civil Rights protests. I would also go and see my family. I would have been told off by the Sisters for running away. They would have stopped giving me cigarettes for a week or I might not have been allowed to go on the next day or weekend out.

11. We were allowed to smoke in St. Joseph's. We bought cigarettes with our pocket money and handed them into the office when we returned from the shop. The cigarettes were handed out five times each day. I smoked before going to St. Joseph's. The Sisters were not happy about us smoking but they never stopped us. All of the other girls smoked too.

12. I remember [SJM 11] and [SJM 4] I went to them if I had any problems with the other girls. They helped me. I think very highly of them. I have very fond memories of St. Joseph's and made some lifelong friends. I am a religious person. I found it very comforting and it was all very positive. I am disappointed that anyone would say that they were hurt by the Sisters.

Signed: [SJM 73]
[SJM 73]

Dated this 5 day of February 2016.

PRIVATE

Middletown (approx 1981)

3. I was aged thirteen when I went to Middletown. I was placed in the committal House known as House 1. The House Mother was called [SJM4] I cannot recall her second name. She was a very large woman.
4. I was taken to the dormitory by a member of staff [SJM6]. The sleeping arrangements were cubicles with a draw curtain. [SJM4] the House Mother was also present. [SJM4] hit me on the ear with her hand which tossed me down the corridor when I asked to see my sister. She told me that I would have it hard in Middletown because I was bad.
5. After spending time in House 1 (Committal) I was placed in House 2. My sister was in House 3. My sister and I were also separated during school, however I did see her during Mass in the mornings. We had to attend Mass every morning. During Mass we were told we had to pray very hard to make us good and for God to forgive us. The Priest was not a nice person. On one occasion I recall him slapping me on the face. I also remember talk between the other residents that he was inappropriately touched girls, however, this never happened to me.
6. [SJM1] was the House Mother in House 2. She lived in [] and she was very strict. There was a point system used in House 2. We were expected to get one hundred points per week. If we got less than one hundred points we would have your cigarette allowance cut and our name read out on a Friday night when we would all have been called into the living room by the nuns. All the residents had to get one hundred points or everyone in the house suffered by losing the Friday night treat. The Friday night treat was given out by [SR235]. We would be given chocolate bars and extra cigarettes. On several occasions I would have been beaten by the other girls called [SJM8] [SJM8] and [SJM12] in House 2 because I did not get one hundred points. I would also have been beaten by the nuns for not getting one hundred points. [SR240] in particular would give me terrible beatings. She was a petite lady but brutal. She carried a large bunch of keys that she used to hit us with. She would also kick me and punch me with her knuckles and fists. I believe [SR240] was psychotic and enjoyed beating me. The more I cried

HIA

PRIVATE

2

1 Q. -- and whatever the commotion that caused was SJM4 has
2 come up and flung open the door into the dormitory where
3 you were --

4 A. With her trousers on.

5 Q. -- and she just takes her back of her hand and smacks
6 you where?

7 A. She backhanded me (gesturing), hit me across here,
8 across the ear and face.

9 Q. Across the ear and face?

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. Was this the only time she hit you during your time in
12 St. Joseph's?

13 A. No. She had a great -- that was one of her great
14 traits. You never know when you walked past her whether
15 you, you know -- because the backhander came so quick.
16 She was such a large lady even a push or a poke, you
17 know, would have -- I was obviously very small and
18 petite -- would have put you back, but there was more
19 than one occasion.

20 Q. And did you see her hitting other people?

21 A. Yes, I did.

22 Q. Was that a regular thing that she did, where she would
23 have lifted her hand and struck people?

24 A. She would have. The size of SJM4 alone would have put
25 the fear of God in you and you certainly knew by the rod

1 Q. -- and whatever the commotion that caused was SJM4 has
2 come up and flung open the door into the dormitory where
3 you were --

4 A. With her trousers on.

5 Q. -- and she just takes her back of her hand and smacks
6 you where?

7 A. She backhanded me (gesturing), hit me across here,
8 across the ear and face.

9 Q. Across the ear and face?

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. Was this the only time she hit you during your time in
12 St. Joseph's?

13 A. No. She had a great -- that was one of her great
14 traits. You never know when you walked past her whether
15 you, you know -- because the backhander came so quick.
16 She was such a large lady even a push or a poke, you
17 know, would have -- I was obviously very small and
18 petite -- would have put you back, but there was more
19 than one occasion.

20 Q. And did you see her hitting other people?

21 A. Yes, I did.

22 Q. Was that a regular thing that she did, where she would
23 have lifted her hand and struck people?

24 A. She would have. The size of SJM4 alone would have put
25 the fear of God in you and you certainly knew by the rod

1 Q. You were explaining to me that you have been extremely
2 angry about those circumstances --

3 A. Yes.

4 Q. -- for a very long time.

5 A. Yes.

6 Q. I am going to look at the court order. If we can look,
7 please, at 3015. The background to this you explain in
8 your statement at paragraphs 4 and 5. You and two other
9 girls, GSC16 and GSC17 --

10 A. Uh-huh.

11 Q. We use their names, but their names won't be used beyond
12 the chamber. It is just so that we can be clear who we
13 are talking about.

14 A. Yes.

15 Q. GSC16 and GSC17, the three of you were indecently
16 assaulted by men in [REDACTED].

17 A. Yes.

18 Q. There was a court case as a result of that.

19 A. Yes.

20 Q. But shortly after the matter came to the attention of
21 the police you were brought before the court and
22 an order was made for you to go and live in the Good
23 Shepherd in Derry.

24 A. Yes.

25 Q. The order is on the screen at the moment, and the Panel

PRIVATE

10. [SJM4] was horrible to me. She used to refer to me as the Derry Hog. My sister came to Middletown with another few girls from Derry and she referred to us all as the Derry Hogs. She was also quite physical. She would be the one who would hit you, shove you about and punish you. She was a very big woman and she flung me about a few times. The abuse I suffered from her was mostly verbal and emotional. She was a bully. Everyone was terrified of her. I remember asking her one day if I could get fitted for a bra and she just laughed and said you need to have a chest to get a bra. She was very derogatory. I was not in House One for long. When my twin sister, [HIA376] was moved to Middletown, we were separated soon after. She came in to House One and I was moved to House Three. Residential Social Worker, [SJM43] was Head of House 3. She lived in a flat on site. [SR243] and [SR 257] worked in House 3 and it was more relaxed. House One and Two were joined together with a big corridor and house Three and Four were joined together. [SR244] was the House Mother of House 2 and [SJM44] was the House Mother of House 4.
11. The only time I was able to see my twin, [HIA376] was at school but we were still divided into separate groups. We were not allowed to visit each other's Houses. If I went to House One to see [HIA376] [SJM4] would ask "What do you want Derry Hog?" and send me away. I thought it was wrong and cruel to keep us separated like that as we were identical twins. On one occasion, [HIA376] was rushed to [redacted] Hospital after taking an overdose with another girl's tablets. She was in intensive care and could have died. I do not think she meant to kill herself. I think her and her friend, [SJM14], were trying to get high or whatever. [SJM14] was very bad with asthma and had steroid tablets. They were both rushed to hospital. None of the Sisters or staff told me. I only found out from another girl. When I asked [SR240] about her she told me to go on about my business and that my sister would be alright. They refused to take me to see her. Even when my sister was discharged from hospital, I was not allowed to go to her house to visit her. When she recovered, the only times I saw her was in Chapel, the school hall and the dinner hall.
12. Our daily routine was to get up, washed and get dressed, make beds and then go downstairs for breakfast. We would have had tea and toast and then we did

HIA 176 states that I was not in House 1 for long but this is wrong I worked in House 1 for most of the time I was there as the records will show. I was totally dedicated to caring for the children and concerned about every aspect of their welfare. It is important to stress that the regime required a certain amount of discipline for the effective and efficient running of the Home but this was not imposed at the expense for the children's welfare and to any extent that this is expressed or implied by HIA 176 is untrue.

Complaints of HIA 376

I believe that HIA 376 is the twin sister of HIA 176 I deny each and every one of her complaints. I have never hit her on the ear or tossed her down the corridor and I have never told her that she would have it bad in Middleton because she was bad. HIA 376 claims that she was beaten by the nuns. This is untrue, I am sure if the nuns were physically violent to any of the children I would have known about it. It is also untrue that the behaviour recorded during the day was used by the nuns to beat the children in the evening.

As I have stated above there was a rota system which required the children to help with cleaning and cooking and a points system for earning pocket money but it is wrong to suggest that these matters were operated oppressively or unfairly or that the children were overworked in a cruel way. For example it is untrue that all the furniture was taken outside to the garden to allow for cleaning. The furniture was simply moved aside if and when necessary. Furthermore I do not accept that hands were red raw from cleaning as she states in her statement.

It is true that children would have to work in the kitchen when their turn came up in the rota. This included peeling potatoes. claims she "always seemed to be put on kitchen duty" this is not so – she would not have been required to work in the kitchen any more than any other child under the rota system. Finally it is untrue that the only time got to speak to her sister was if they were allowed home on weekend leave. They were at school together every day and were permitted to visit each other in the different houses as explained above.

The historical allegations of SJM 58

In relation to the allegations made against me by SJM 58 in her police statement of 7th September 1998. I wish to firmly deny each and every allegation of sexual or physical assault made against me. I have been interviewed about these matters by the police and firmly denied each and every one of the allegations. A thorough investigation was carried out by the police at the time and I wish to rely on the findings and conclusions of the Supervising Officer, and for the Director of Public Prosecutions. In short, that there was no evidence to support the allegations and that accordingly no prosecution was directed.

It was usual for a child to have a key worker and I was SJM 58 key worker. Children were often referred to as their key worker's child and she would have been referred to as child as were others. I accept that I was fond of her and bought her the odd present like a teddy bear as I did with some others. There was nothing unusual about this however and every one of her allegations about coming into my bed and about me sexually assaulting her are totally untrue. I accept that she stayed over in my mother's house on one occasion but we slept in twin beds and there was no impropriety whatsoever.

Witness Statement of [REDACTED] SJM 4

Personal Details

[REDACTED]

I was born on [REDACTED]. I worked at St Joseph's Training School, Middleton from 1972 until 1998 when I retired. There were 4 houses, a school and a convent on the site. I was employed as the House-mother of House 1. House 1 was for the children on remand i.e. those who had not yet been adjudicated by the court. There was about 8 – 10 girls in each house. The girls slept in a dormitory, each bed area sectioned off by a curtain. My duties were to look after the children during the day including cooking for them and making sure they got to school etc. On the night shift I would also be responsible for getting them to bed. I had my own flat and would sleep over when on the night shift; this happened about 6 nights a month usually once but sometimes twice a week; when on day shift I went home to my mother's when I finished my shift, until 1981 when I got married and got my own home.

Allegations of [REDACTED] HIA 176 [REDACTED] HIA 176)

I remember [REDACTED] HIA 176 she refers in her witness statement to [REDACTED] I accept that she is referring to me and that she is mistaken regarding my name. In relation to the allegations she has made against me, I deny each and every one of them. I have never physically assaulted her or any of the children in my care. I have never hit her or shoved her about or flung her about as she alleges. I have never abused her verbally or emotionally. The term "Derry Hogs" was used by other children in the home in relation to the children from Derry but I have never called her a "Derry Hog"

I deny that I could ever have been described as a bully and deny that I ever laughed at her after she asked me if she could get fitted for a bra. This incident never happened. She also alleges that she had a twin in a different House and was prevented from visiting her. This is untrue. The children were together at school but were also permitted to visit each other if they were in different Houses. This was facilitated by the House-mother in a particular House phoning the other House to ask if it was convenient for a visit and if so the arrangement was made. I regularly arranged and consented to visits by girls between Houses. I do not recall her sister being in hospital but if she was, her sister would have been fully informed and she would have been permitted to visit her.

The children had a work rota and they would have to help clean the dorms and wash their clothes and help with preparing the dinner etc. These matters were structured in a formal rota system i.e. set days for laundry and so forth and included washing their clothes by hand as there was no washing machine and helping to polish the floors. There was nothing unusual about this and I feel it is important to stress that the children were not over- worked and would have Saturday afternoons off to lounge about in free recreation.

There was a points system for pocket money but it is untrue to say that it was administered in an unfair way or in a way which would have humiliated any of the children.

maiden name was [SJM 4]. She was senior residential social worker for House 1. She became known by the girls as [redacted] or [redacted]. During my time working at St. Joseph's [SJM 4] was a member of staff who was much loved by the girls who were resident in St. Joseph's. She was appointed house mother because she had an excellent rapport with the girls having had long experience caring for children prior to coming to St. Joseph's. I was not aware until I read [HIA 376] statement of any allegation that [SJM 4] hit [HIA 376] or indeed hit any child in St. Joseph's. I would never condone the striking of a child in the way [HIA 376] has described. Such an act would be totally wrong and against all our discipline and pastoral care policies in place at St. Joseph's at the time when [HIA 376] was in our care. I read the allegations with genuine shock as this alleged treatment is completely inconsistent with everything I know about [SJM 4] and how she cared for the girls' in House 1 during the time I was on staff at St. Joseph's. I have reflected very carefully on my memories of this period and I have to say that I find it very difficult to believe that she would have hit [HIA 376] or that she would have told her that she would have it hard in Middletown because she was bad. It goes against everything I know about [SJM 4] caring nature and it is also totally against how the management and staff in St. Joseph's believed girls who came into our care should have be treated.

8. In response to paragraph 5 (SJM – 061) I can confirm that [HIA 376] was subsequently placed in House 2. Our records show that she was admitted to House 2 on the evening of 13th October 1983 and the diary entry for that day states that she settled in very well. [HIA 376] makes reference in her statement to being separated from her sister [HIA 176] who was resident in House 3. [HIA 176] dates in St. Joseph's were:

- 16.02.82 to 28.01.83
- 04.03.83 to 31.08.83

testimony to this. Attempts at suicide and drug overdoses are a common occurrence. Therefore the need for supervision of an intensive nature is essential. Staff have to create a balance between close supervision and at the same time allow for privacy and the opportunity for a girl to have quiet moments. It appears that this fine balance is achieved most of the time".

11. At paragraph 10 **HIA 176** alleges that **SJM 4** was verbally, emotionally and physically abusive. As I mentioned above, to the best of my knowledge **SJM 4** was a much loved member of staff. She was chosen as a house mother for House 1 because she was a highly skilled individual and had particular skills in settling new girls into the assessment unit. Our records show that **HIA 176** moved to House 3 on 16th March 1983. Her sister **HIA 376** came to St. Joseph's in June 1983 and was admitted to House 1 for a period of assessment. The girls were not housed together in House 1 or House 3 at any time. Whilst we did not have a firm policy of separating siblings it was the general view of senior management that in most cases it was better to have siblings separated. It was important for each child to have their own space and to develop their own identity bearing in mind that many of the girls who came to us had been severely neglected in their family units. Often there were particular tensions at home with either parents or siblings (or both) which had contributed to the behavioural difficulties and this would have been an important factor in not housing siblings in the same unit. I recall that there were difficult tensions between **HIA 176** and her sister **HIA 376** and there are a number of entries which confirm that **HIA 176** did not want to see her sister **HIA 376** and other entries confirm conflict between both of them. I have attached all relevant diary entries marked **BD 3**. I have also found a diary entry which was made after **HIA 176** admission and prior to the admission of **HIA 376** which was made by **SJM 43** house mother. It confirms that **HIA 176** was to be allowed to phone her sister while she was resident in Harberton House. That diary entry is marked **BD 4**. **HIA 176** recalls that Sister

1 time actually, because everybody of every age refers to
2 her as SJM4. She then was a much larger than life
3 person. I am not sure what experience children had of
4 larger than life females, but often a reaction when they
5 saw her would have been, "Oh, God! Look at the size of
6 her!" That wouldn't have been quite the language they
7 used, but nevertheless the sentiment remains, but SJM4
8 was always from my experience a very warm, nurturing
9 person. She was very, very motherly. The children
10 loved her, but the staff loved her also, because you
11 could have -- SJM4 was one of those people you could
12 have gone to if you were worried about something, if you
13 were concerned, if you were just having a not so good
14 day. The children had the same relationship with her.
15 Even when children moved on to other units, they would
16 often want to come back to SJM4.

17 It wouldn't be unusual if SJM4 was walking down to
18 school with some of the girls that the other girls from
19 other units would be hanging off her literally, catching
20 up, telling her what they were doing, what was happening
21 in their lives. She was a very warm, motherly figure
22 really.

23 Q. The other person -- the Director during your time there
24 was SR240. We know she has been unable to come and
25 speak to the Inquiry, but I just wondered -- you were

1 opened the police material relating to that and the
2 difficulties that there were in relation to the
3 allegations that were being made -- but those are the
4 only complaints that the Inquiry is aware of relating to
5 SJM4 or SJM4, as you knew her.

6 A. SJM4, yes.

7 Q. What you are saying is that it was really a matter of
8 routine that she would have struck individuals in the
9 way you are describing with this back of the hand --

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. -- motion.

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. For whatever reason those people haven't made those
14 complaints to the congregation or the Inquiry or the
15 police.

16 A. Uh-huh.

17 Q. The other incident that from my working through the
18 material seems to happen about the House 1 period, if we
19 look at paragraph 5 of your statement, please, at 061,
20 you talk about attending mass every morning. I was
21 having a discussion with you, as you know --

22 A. Yes.

23 Q. -- about whether it was mass or whether it might have
24 been an assembly and not actual mass --

25 A. Yes, yes.

1 took place."

2 I can say to the Panel that as far as the Inquiry is
3 aware this is the only allegation that is made against
4 SR260. In fairness to her this allegation is not made
5 by SJM52 herself.

6 In paragraph 18 of HIA176's statement at 474,
7 please, she does talk, as did her sister, about SR240,
8 who was the head of St. Joseph's during HIA176's time.
9 She says in paragraph 18 that SR240 would come up behind
10 you and dig her knuckle in your back while carrying her
11 keys.

12 The sequence of events, if I can just explain it to
13 the Panel, is that SR240, being in ill health by the
14 time she was being asked to contribute to the Inquiry,
15 was in a position to provide a witness statement and did
16 that in relation to the allegations made by HIA376, and
17 you are aware from what she said in relation to HIA376
18 that she was saying in addition to not hitting HIA376
19 she was explaining her general ethos and that she didn't
20 hit any child. By the time the Inquiry then asked SR240
21 to respond to the particular allegation made by HIA176
22 SR240's health had deteriorated further, and the Inquiry
23 has received a second medical record to explain why
24 SR240 is not only now not in a position to give oral
25 evidence, but not in a position to respond by providing

1 further witness statements. So in fairness to her
2 I would refer you back to what she said in her witness
3 statement relating to HIA376, HIA176's sister.

4 SR235 speaking on behalf of the congregation, if we
5 look, please, at 29010 and paragraph 19, she says,
6 making reference to a particular incident said to have
7 happened on a retreat in Monaghan:

8 "I have no knowledge about the allegation of the
9 theft of altar wine. I have also no knowledge of any
10 allegation that SR240 threatened to beat the girls until
11 she found out who had stolen the wine. I find this
12 story very hard to believe and I base this on my
13 knowledge of working with SR240 for a long period of
14 time. She was always a caring member of staff towards
15 the girls. I can confirm she carried a bunch of keys,
16 as she was the most senior person in charge on site.
17 I have no knowledge of girls being beaten after they
18 owned up to the theft and again I have to say that
19 I find it very difficult to accept that this took place.
20 If it did take place, then of course it was very wrong."

21 In paragraph 19 of HIA176's statement, if we look at
22 475, please, she makes an allegation about SR240 beating
23 a girl who stole glue from the office. You can see
24 reference to her commenting on having witnessed
25 subsequent events.

PRIVATE

Middletown (approx 1981)

3. I was aged thirteen when I went to Middletown. I was placed in the committal House known as House 1. The House Mother was called [SJM4] I cannot recall her second name. She was a very large woman.
4. I was taken to the dormitory by a member of staff [SJM6]. The sleeping arrangements were cubicles with a draw curtain. [SJM4] the House Mother was also present. [SJM4] hit me on the ear with her hand which tossed me down the corridor when I asked to see my sister. She told me that I would have it hard in Middletown because I was bad.
5. After spending time in House 1 (Committal) I was placed in House 2. My sister was in House 3. My sister and I were also separated during school, however I did see her during Mass in the mornings. We had to attend Mass every morning. During Mass we were told we had to pray very hard to make us good and for God to forgive us. The Priest was not a nice person. On one occasion I recall him slapping me on the face. I also remember talk between the other residents that he was inappropriately touched girls, however, this never happened to me.
6. [SJM1] was the House Mother in House 2. She lived in [] and she was very strict. There was a point system used in House 2. We were expected to get one hundred points per week. If we got less than one hundred points we would have your cigarette allowance cut and our name read out on a Friday night when we would all have been called into the living room by the nuns. All the residents had to get one hundred points or everyone in the house suffered by losing the Friday night treat. The Friday night treat was given out by [SR235]. We would be given chocolate bars and extra cigarettes. On several occasions I would have been beaten by the other girls called [SJM8] [SJM8] and [SJM12] in House 2 because I did not get one hundred points. I would also have been beaten by the nuns for not getting one hundred points. [SR240] in particular would give me terrible beatings. She was a petite lady but brutal. She carried a large bunch of keys that she used to hit us with. She would also kick me and punch me with her knuckles and fists. I believe [SR240] was psychotic and enjoyed beating me. The more I cried

HIA

PRIVATE

2

PRIVATE

the more she would beat me. I quickly learned that I had to behave. SR240

SR240 would tell me that my parents didn't want me and that was why I was in Middletown. She would also tell me that I was dirty. The House Mother from House 1, SJM4 and SJM1 told me to keep my mouth shut and my head down and I would be alright.

7. We received pocket money in Middletown. On a Friday we were allowed to go to the village to spend it. I would have spent my pocket money on cigarettes.
8. There was a record book kept in Middletown which recorded our behaviour during the day. I believe the nuns who looked after us in the evening used this record against us. If we misbehaved during the day the nuns would punish us in the evening.
9. A daily task in Middletown was to clean and dust the dormitory. We would have to get up very early to clean and dust before going to Mass. We would not have had breakfast until we returned from Mass. SR243 who is now deceased would inspect the dormitories. She would wear a white glove and run her finger along an area to check if we had cleaned it correctly. If the room was not to her satisfaction she would wreck it, beat us and make us do it again.
10. On a Saturday we were made to clean all day from 9.00am to 6.00pm with one 5 minute break and a lunch break. My hands would have been red raw from the cleaning. Literally all the furniture of the house had to be taken outside to the garden to allow for cleaning. SR244 used to tell me I was a great cleaner. However, I recall on one occasion there was a tea stain in the sink and SR244 SR244 grabbed me by the ears, dragged me to the sink before slapping me across the head. She told me that I would get no tea until it was spotless. I also recall having to polish the wooden floors. I would turn a carpet tile upside down and slide along the floor to make it shine.
11. Another daily duty in Middletown was kitchen duty. I did not like kitchen duty but I always seemed to be put on kitchen duty. This involved washing and peeling

PRIVATE

the potatoes, lighting the coal fire, cooking the dinner and setting the dining table. After dinner I would have to wash the dishes.

12. Lights were switched off at 10.30pm and during the night my sister and I would climb up to the top window of our dormitories and shout out to each other that we loved each other.
13. During the summer of 1981 we were taken to [REDACTED] for a summer holiday. I remember being in a Hotel. Some of the House Mothers were there. I recall House Mothers SJM1 [REDACTED] and SJM13 [REDACTED] were drunk on alcohol. Myself and some of the other girls sneaked out through the toilet window and went to a disco. I recall drinking alcohol at the disco.
14. As a form of punishment when my parents would visit during the summer I would be allowed to see them but not allowed to speak to them. There was a beautiful lawn at the front of the home where I would be taken to see my parents. SR244 [REDACTED] would make me take tea on a tray to my parents. My sister HIA176 [REDACTED] would also be present and we would not have been allowed to speak to each other. I recall walking away crying from my parents. I used to wonder why my parents put me in Middletown because I suffered more beatings in Middletown than I ever did when I was at home.
15. When I was in House 2 I told SJM14 [REDACTED] from [REDACTED] and SJM15 [REDACTED] SJM15 [REDACTED] from [REDACTED] that I wanted to run away because I had had enough. Neither of the girls would come with me so I locked myself in the boot of a car and took an overdose of tablets. I was taken to [REDACTED] Hospital. I was told I was bad and that I would not be getting any sympathy and no one would be coming to see me. My parents or my sister was not told about this incident for a week and when my sister asked to see me she was told no. I recall SR245 [REDACTED] came to collect me. SR245 [REDACTED] was a good nun, she never hit me nor did I ever see her hit anyone else. She drove me back to Middletown and put me in the dormitory. I did not get any food for three days. I believe it was the nuns way of punishing me for taking an overdose.

PRIVATE

16. Following the three days without food I was taken to Monaghan. SR235 was driving the car and my sister HIA176, SJM16 and SJM12 were also present. I must have misbehaved during the journey. SR235 stopped the car and dragged me out by the hair and put me in the boot. I remember having to stop at the British Army check point at the Border and a Solider asked SR235 to open the boot. The Solider asked her why I was in the boot and she told him because I was talking too much and not listening. The Solider just closed the boot leaving me inside. When we arrived back at Middletown I went to the dormitory. SR240 came in and gave me a beating. I recall on this occasion SR240 punched, slapped and pulled my hair.
17. I received beatings and I witnessed other residents receive beating from SR240 SR240 SR244 SJM4 from House 1 and SJM1 from House 2, however, SR240 was the most brutal. My sister HIA176 became pregnant whilst in Middletown. SR240 beat me and told me it was my fault as I was the oldest. I was older by [REDACTED]. I would describe my time in Middletown as a living hell, even when I was in bed sleeping I recall getting beatings.
18. I also remember being beaten by other girls in Middleton. I remember the [REDACTED] girls being the worst for the beatings.
19. In Middletown there was a Sister called SR246 she had permed hair. Myself and another girl from [REDACTED] called SJM17 were her favourites. SR246 would come up to our dormitory at around 10.30pm and take us down to her living area. She would make us chips and let us sit at the fire. She would be drinking vodka and smoking. She would ask us questions about boyfriends, kissing and sex. I was just thirteen I had not kissed anyone before let alone had sex. At the time I didn't really understand what she was talking about. SJM17 and I never told anyone about this because we were getting chips, cigarettes and allowed to stay up late.

would have been for a shopping trip or to leave or collect a girl from the bus which would have been often. It is highly unlikely to have been a shopping trip as we normally only took girls from the same house on a trip and [HIA 376] has stated that she and her sister, who was in House 3, were in the car together. The diary entries from the relevant time confirm that I did take [HIA 376] and her sister to the bus if they were both going home on leave for the weekend. I did not drag [HIA 376] out of a car by her hair and put her in the boot of my car. I find such a suggestion offensive, hurtful and quite honestly beyond belief. What further confirms me in my belief that it did not happen is that [HIA 376] goes on to state that a member of the British Army stopped the car, found her in the boot and closed it leaving her inside. I do not believe such an incident happened or that a soldier would have collaborated in such unacceptable treatment of a child.

29. In response to paragraph 17 (SJM – 064) I never witnessed [HIA 376] or any other child receiving beatings from [SJM 11], [SR 275], [SJM 4] or [SJM 1]. [SJM 1] I can confirm that [HIA 376] sister [HIA 176] became pregnant whilst in Middletown. The allegations that [HIA 376] makes about having been beaten by [SJM 11] as a punishment for her sister [HIA 176] becoming pregnant is the first time I have been made aware of this. The records we have from the diary entries regarding [HIA 176] pregnancy do not support [HIA 376] recollection. The diaries confirm that [HIA 176] received support from the staff at St. Joseph's to enable her to tell her parents that she was pregnant. It is clear from the diary notes previously marked **BD3** which form part of [HIA 176] file that their reaction was a great worry for her (especially her father's) see entry for 29 September 1984. I also refer to the attached diary entries marked **BD7** which confirm that [HIA 176] came to stay for an overnight visit with us at St. Joseph's along with her baby and her sister [HIA 376]. The visit took place on 22nd November 1985 and during this visit [HIA 376] told us she was 3 months pregnant. The next diary entry we have is for Sunday 3rd August 1986

1 "I can say without hesitation that the incident
2 which she described did not happen. The only reason for
3 the journey to Monaghan by car would have been for a
4 shopping trip or to leave or collect a girl from the
5 bus, which would have been often. It is highly unlikely
6 to have been a shopping trip, as we normally only took
7 girls from the same house on a trip, and HIA376 has
8 stated that she and her sister, who was in House 3, were
9 in the car together. The diary entries from the
10 relevant time confirm that I did take HIA376 and her
11 sister to the bus if they were going home on leave for
12 the weekend. I did not drag HIA376 out of a car by her
13 hair and put her in the boot of my car. I find such
14 a suggestion offensive, hurtful and quite honestly
15 beyond belief. What further confirms me in my belief
16 that it did not happen is that HIA376 goes on to state
17 that a member of the British Army stopped the car, found
18 her in the boot and closed it, leaving her inside. I do
19 not believe such an incident happened or that a soldier
20 would have collaborated in such unacceptable treatment
21 of a child."

22 Now, Sister, is there anything more other than that
23 paragraph that I've read out that you want to say to the
24 Inquiry about that incident -- that allegation?

25 A. I never, never put anybody into the boot of a car and

1 I never dragged any child by her hair from a car.

2 Q. Well, Sister, aside from positive comments about
3 St. Joseph's in inspection reports that we looked at
4 earlier this week and positive comments from some of
5 those who came to the Inquiry to complain about other
6 institutions, the Inquiry has been provided by the
7 congregation with three statements from former
8 residents. I am going to name them:

9 SJM73 , who was there in the 1970s and up to
10 '81, and her statement has been added to the bundle at
11 SJM29259 to 29262;

12 SJM74 . She was there between 1962 and
13 1965. Her statement is at 29263 to 29268; and

14 SJM75 , who was there from '94 to '96.
15 Her statement is at 29269 to 29273.

16 I am not going to go through their statements, but
17 the Inquiry has read them. All of them have positive
18 memories of their time in St. Joseph's.

19 Sister, those are all the issues that I wanted to
20 raise with you in your evidence, but is there anything
21 else that you want to say about St. Joseph's or about
22 anything that is in your statements that I haven't
23 covered? Now is your opportunity to do that.

24 A. I just want to say that my experience of life in
25 St. Joseph's was demanding, but it was very worthwhile,

1 confirms me in my belief that it did not happen is that
2 HIA376 goes on to state that a member of the British
3 Army stopped the car, found her in the boot and closed
4 it, leaving her inside. I do not believe such
5 an incident happened or that a soldier would have
6 collaborated in such unacceptable treatment of a child."

7 So that's what she is saying is, "This just didn't
8 happen".

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. She was asked during her evidence whether there was
11 anything she wanted to add beyond what she'd said in her
12 statement. For the record, Members of the Panel, this
13 is on page 27 of her -- the transcript. She said:

14 "I never, never put anybody into the boot of a car
15 and I never dragged any child by her hair from a car."

16 So that's what she says about the incident. Is
17 there anything else you want to say or have we covered
18 most of it? You say it did happen in the way you
19 describe.

20 A. It did happen. I still get flashbacks of it. It did
21 happen. You know, if I -- if I was to say -- well, if
22 I was a young soldier and a nun told me in them days in
23 the '80s, you know, "Well, she should have been
24 listening instead of talking" and her a nun, I would
25 have done the same thing.

1 CHAIRMAN: I see. So her designation number is?

2 MR AIKEN: That's something I will try and acquire and I'll
3 give that to the Panel Members.

4 CHAIRMAN: But in any event she didn't come to give
5 evidence, because she didn't reach that stage of the
6 process?

7 MR AIKEN: Yes, but from material that was available to the
8 Inquiry legal team it was clear what was being spoken of
9 and what there was no reference to.

10 If I pause just at this point, Chairman and Members
11 of the Panel, just to draw attention to a point that the
12 congregation have raised, and that is you will recall
13 that HIA376 speaks of the incident where SR235 herself,
14 who has provided the substantial statement on behalf of
15 the Order, is said to have forcibly removed HIA376 and
16 placed her in the boot of the car, and that on that
17 journey it is said that HIA176 was also present. The
18 congregation draw to the Panel's attention that HIA176
19 herself makes no mention of an incident of that sort.

20 In paragraph 22 of HIA176's statement, if we look at
21 475, please, she criticises the congregation for its
22 facilitating of smoking amongst the girls in Middletown.
23 SR235 acknowledges in the context of the time, if we
24 look at 29012, please, at paragraph -- just if I can
25 note here that it is being said in the statement that it

1 the diary entries it shows when you are not there or
2 when HIA176 is not there, communication being
3 facilitated with Social Services, and I think in your
4 statement you don't recall a lot of involvement, but you
5 were happy from our discussion to accept there was
6 evidence of a lot of involvement of Social Services
7 seeing you both in Middletown and then when you were at
8 home in Derry at the weekend.

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. The issue that caused significant difficulty then -- you
11 talk about it in paragraph 17 of your statement -- was
12 whenever your sister fell pregnant --

13 A. Yes.

14 Q. -- and you were explaining that the two of you were both
15 involved with this boy and this caused extensive
16 difficulty between you.

17 A. Yes.

18 Q. But what you were drawing to the Panel's attention was
19 that whenever you -- basically you were punished.

20 A. I was punished.

21 Q. You were beaten by SR240 --

22 A. Yes.

23 Q. -- saying to you it was your fault --

24 A. Yes.

25 Q. -- your sister got pregnant, because you were the

1 oldest.

2 A. Yes. I should have known better. I should have been --
3 my dad too. Everybody came up shouting and roaring and
4 I got the blame for her getting pregnant. I do believe
5 now that the conflict with me and , and still to
6 this day, is to do with what happened and how it
7 happened at 17 with this particular gentleman.

8 Q. Okay. In the diary -- and I am not going to --

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. -- I will draw the Panel's attention to the
11 page references. They are at 979 through to 981.
12 They're a rather detailed description of the efforts the
13 congregation were going to make to facilitate you to
14 help the message be broken that HIA176 was pregnant, and
15 describes your dad coming up and him shouting at both of
16 you, but certainly no reference to SR240, although you
17 made the point to me, "Well, they would never record
18 that they hit you in their diaries", but no reference to
19 you being punished for your sister falling pregnant. In
20 fact, the congregation have said to the Inquiry that
21 while they were not keen that that would happen, they
22 did support those girls who did fall pregnant.

23 A. Uh-huh.

24 Q. In fairness your sister, once this news became known,
25 came back to live for a period to allow things to

She could meet [redacted] SJM 76
 and they could go around to [redacted]
 home together. [redacted] sang reg. her
 licensing money. Her black coat and
 sandals are not in her luggage.

Friday
 22nd Nov

[redacted] + [redacted] at work.
 [redacted] going to Belfast on
 4 p.m. bus. [redacted] meeting [redacted] and both
 in Armagh. [redacted] and both
 girls going to [redacted] for W/E
 [redacted] HIA 376 [redacted] HIA 176 + baby [redacted]
 arrived on 5.30 p.m. bus.
 Both in good form and looking
 very well despite [redacted] HIA 376
 news that she is 3 mths pregnant

Saturday
 23rd Nov

[redacted] went to Belfast with [redacted] SR 234
 [redacted] baby. [redacted] HIA 376 to meet
 into Armagh for shopping late afternoon.
 [redacted] went home on early bus - at
 in good form.

[redacted] + baby stayed
 here tonight.

1 goes home on the early bus --

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. -- and you go with whoever the author of this is into
4 Armagh for shopping until the late afternoon.

5 A. Right. Yes.

6 Q. So I think the point the congregation are making is if
7 life was remotely like the way you are describing to the
8 Inquiry today --

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. -- why would you be coming back of your own choice six
11 months after you have got out of the place and staying
12 over and shopping with staff?

13 A. Well, you will always go back to the abuser if you are
14 being abused, and the life at home -- when we did leave
15 Middletown, that's exactly what happened. We went back
16 home and still being abused, which brought us back to
17 Middletown, because although we were being abused, you
18 know, we were getting fed. We had a roof over our head.
19 We were warm. We had hot water, you know. I suppose in
20 them days when you were beaten, you know, you accepted
21 it, because it is really hard to say, but when I was
22 getting -- when we were getting abused and beaten at
23 home, we thought that was normal, because mummy was
24 getting beaten. Then we go into care and then get
25 beaten, and then come out of care and go home, and

2. I vaguely remember [HIA 376] When she was resident in St. Joseph's she was known as [HIA 376] I recall that she had a [] sister called [HIA 176] who was also a resident of St. Joseph's prior to [HIA 376] coming to us.
3. I have read [HIA 376] statement with great sadness and distress. In particular I wish to respond to what she says at paragraph 6 (SJM – 061), paragraph 8 (SJM – 062), paragraph 14 (SJM – 063), paragraph 16 (SJM – 064), paragraph 17 (SJM – 064) and paragraph 28 (SJM – 066).
4. In all of these paragraphs [HIA 376] has alleged that I beat her, slapped her, punched her, pulled her hair, kicked her and hit her with a large bunch of keys. The children who came into our care at St. Joseph's were amongst the most damaged and vulnerable girls in society. Many of them had been severely neglected, rejected by their family, physically and sexually abused and often understandably nervous of trusting anyone in authority. During my professional life I have always been totally against any form of abuse of children whether that be physical, mental or sexual. My philosophy while in charge of St. Joseph's was that because abuse is one of the main experiences these girls had in life before they came to us, any form of physical punishment was not only wrong but it was totally contrary and counter-productive to what we were trying to achieve. My idea was that positive feedback would help build up in a girl a positive view of themselves and contribute to them developing as responsible members of society. My main aim was to try to help them to grow and to learn to take responsibility and discover what they were good at through positive education, positive role models and positive care from staff at St. Joseph's in their daily lives. I absolutely deny any allegation I ever struck [HIA 376] in any way. I have never received a complaint during my time in charge of St. Joseph's regarding physical abused by me of a girl in my care. This witness statement is the first

2. I vaguely remember [HIA 376] When she was resident in St. Joseph's she was known as [HIA 376] I recall that she had a [] sister called [HIA 176] who was also a resident of St. Joseph's prior to [HIA 376] coming to us.
3. I have read [HIA 376] statement with great sadness and distress. In particular I wish to respond to what she says at paragraph 6 (SJM – 061), paragraph 8 (SJM – 062), paragraph 14 (SJM – 063), paragraph 16 (SJM – 064), paragraph 17 (SJM – 064) and paragraph 28 (SJM – 066).
4. In all of these paragraphs [HIA 376] has alleged that I beat her, slapped her, punched her, pulled her hair, kicked her and hit her with a large bunch of keys. The children who came into our care at St. Joseph's were amongst the most damaged and vulnerable girls in society. Many of them had been severely neglected, rejected by their family, physically and sexually abused and often understandably nervous of trusting anyone in authority. During my professional life I have always been totally against any form of abuse of children whether that be physical, mental or sexual. My philosophy while in charge of St. Joseph's was that because abuse is one of the main experiences these girls had in life before they came to us, any form of physical punishment was not only wrong but it was totally contrary and counter-productive to what we were trying to achieve. My idea was that positive feedback would help build up in a girl a positive view of themselves and contribute to them developing as responsible members of society. My main aim was to try to help them to grow and to learn to take responsibility and discover what they were good at through positive education, positive role models and positive care from staff at St. Joseph's in their daily lives. I absolutely deny any allegation I ever struck [HIA 376] in any way. I have never received a complaint during my time in charge of St. Joseph's regarding physical abused by me of a girl in my care. This witness statement is the first

indication that HIA 376 suffered any form of abuse from staff while she was in our care.

5. As is clear from the diary entries that we have relating to HIA 376 period with us, she was a challenging girl who had experienced considerable difficulties before coming to us however we offered her every support and assistance to grow and develop and make the transition to an independent life. None of the diary entries are consistent with her being unhappy with her care and indeed the later entries show that she returned to visit us in St. Joseph's after she had left and kept up some contact after the birth of her first child.

PRIVATE

arts and crafts. In her class, we just made gollywogs or knitted. As a treat, she would reward you with cigarettes. [SJM46] was the maths teacher. Her idea of teaching maths was to play bingo and we would get cigarettes for a line or a full house. [SJM47] taught cookery but if you didn't want to cook you could watch two films instead. We watched the same two films, 'One flew over the cuckoo's nest' and 'Calamity Jane', for the two years I was there. [SJM48] was the music teacher but we would just sing songs in her class and [SR259] taught PE. The only male member of staff was the priest. I think he was called [SJM49]. We only ever saw him on a Sunday. He was a horrible man. I remember he smacked a girl called [SJM50] on the face when she went up to receive the Sacrament because she wore red lipstick in the chapel. He was a small man and I remember he was old.

17. We did not wear a uniform. There was a local clothes store where we went to get our clothes. There was no choice and we had to take what we were given. Everybody wore corduroy skirts and sweatshirts. I remember we were taken to [] for our shoes. We all wore desert boots. I made friends with the other girls from Derry. We stuck together. There was [SJM51], [SJM16], [SJM12] and my twin sister [HIA376], [SJM16] and [SJM12] are dead now. [SJM51] lives in Derry. I am no longer in contact with her. We would all comfort each other. I remember we came back from Church one day and [SR260] broke a brush over [SJM52]'s back. We had been carrying on the night before, just probably chatting and one of the residential workers, [], had spoken to [SR260]. [SR260] was waiting at the door and [SJM52] was the first through the door and was punished. I thanked God that I had not walked through the door first that day.

18. We were taken to a retreat once in Milford House in Armagh. A few of the girls from Belfast broke in to the retreat house and stole some altar wine. We were all lined up by [SR240] and she said she would beat us all until she found out who stole the wine. [SR240] was the anti-Christ. She always carried round a bunch of keys because everywhere she went she was always unlocking the doors. She would have come up behind you with a bunch of keys in her hand and dug her knuckle into your back and say things like, 'Are you behaving

PRIVATE

yourself **HIA176** The girls eventually owned up and got a terrible beating. I also remember trips to **[REDACTED]** in September. We would have put on Christmas plays in Middletown for the staff and the girl's parents but my parents never came as Middletown was so far away. I had my sister there but we were separated and it was very isolating.

19. One of the girls called **SJM78** lived in my house. I remember on one occasion, she stole glue. She was a glue sniffer. **SR240** came into the classroom and pulled her out. We could see **SR240**'s office from our classroom. We heard screaming coming from her office and we could see her being beaten through the window. She used her hands to hit her.
20. I do not remember **SR240** having any favourite girls or ever showing any affection to anyone. We only ever saw **SR240** or **SR244** if there was a problem that they had to deal with.
21. **SR244** would have dished out the beatings in House 2. I witnessed her hit a Belfast girl called **SJM50**.
22. I went home at weekends sometimes with my twin sister. We were put on a bus and sent home. My mother and step-father were very abusive towards us but we were still sent back to them for weekends and holidays. I remember spending one Easter in Middletown and **SR243** came round with tins of sweets and cigarettes. I never smoked before I went to Middletown. It just seems ludicrous to me that cigarettes were given to me at fourteen years of age by nuns.
23. If we had a medical complaint, we would have seen the nurse, **SJM55**. If it was very serious, she would have made an appointment for you with the Doctor and the Doctor would have come into the school to see you. I remember seeing **SJM55**, the nurse on site, about my chest. She said it was just phlegm and was not concerned about the smoking. I was diagnosed with asthma when I was twenty-seven and I continue to have problems with my chest. I was never taken to the dentist the whole time I was there. It was never explained to me what

PRIVATE

yourself **HIA176** The girls eventually owned up and got a terrible beating. I also remember trips to **[REDACTED]** in September. We would have put on Christmas plays in Middletown for the staff and the girl's parents but my parents never came as Middletown was so far away. I had my sister there but we were separated and it was very isolating.

19. One of the girls called **SJM78** lived in my house. I remember on one occasion, she stole glue. She was a glue sniffer. **SR240** came into the classroom and pulled her out. We could see **SR240**'s office from our classroom. We heard screaming coming from her office and we could see her being beaten through the window. She used her hands to hit her.
20. I do not remember **SR240** having any favourite girls or ever showing any affection to anyone. We only ever saw **SR240** or **SR244** if there was a problem that they had to deal with.
21. **SR244** would have dished out the beatings in House 2. I witnessed her hit a Belfast girl called **SJM50**.
22. I went home at weekends sometimes with my twin sister. We were put on a bus and sent home. My mother and step-father were very abusive towards us but we were still sent back to them for weekends and holidays. I remember spending one Easter in Middletown and **SR243** came round with tins of sweets and cigarettes. I never smoked before I went to Middletown. It just seems ludicrous to me that cigarettes were given to me at fourteen years of age by nuns.
23. If we had a medical complaint, we would have seen the nurse, **SJM55**. If it was very serious, she would have made an appointment for you with the Doctor and the Doctor would have come into the school to see you. I remember seeing **SJM55**, the nurse on site, about my chest. She said it was just phlegm and was not concerned about the smoking. I was diagnosed with asthma when I was twenty-seven and I continue to have problems with my chest. I was never taken to the dentist the whole time I was there. It was never explained to me what

PRIVATE

yourself HIA176. The girls eventually owned up and got a terrible beating. I also remember trips to [REDACTED] in September. We would have put on Christmas plays in Middletown for the staff and the girl's parents but my parents never came as Middletown was so far away. I had my sister there but we were separated and it was very isolating.

19. One of the girls called SJM78 lived in my house. I remember on one occasion, she stole glue. She was a glue sniffer. SR240 came into the classroom and pulled her out. We could see SR240's office from our classroom. We heard screaming coming from her office and we could see her being beaten through the window. She used her hands to hit her.
20. I do not remember SR240 having any favourite girls or ever showing any affection to anyone. We only ever saw SR240 or SR244 if there was a problem that they had to deal with.
21. SR244 would have dished out the beatings in House 2. I witnessed her hit a Belfast girl called SJM50.
22. I went home at weekends sometimes with my twin sister. We were put on a bus and sent home. My mother and step-father were very abusive towards us but we were still sent back to them for weekends and holidays. I remember spending one Easter in Middletown and SR243 came round with tins of sweets and cigarettes. I never smoked before I went to Middletown. It just seems ludicrous to me that cigarettes were given to me at fourteen years of age by nuns.
23. If we had a medical complaint, we would have seen the nurse, SJM55. If it was very serious, she would have made an appointment for you with the Doctor and the Doctor would have come into the school to see you. I remember seeing SJM55, the nurse on site, about my chest. She said it was just phlegm and was not concerned about the smoking. I was diagnosed with asthma when I was twenty-seven and I continue to have problems with my chest. I was never taken to the dentist the whole time I was there. It was never explained to me what

purchased by the girls staff take them shopping, give them advice on suitability, style and sizes". The usual shopping destinations would have been Craigavon, Armagh and Dundalk. We used the local shoe shop in Middletown which was

18. I can confirm that [SJM 51] [SJM 16] [SJM 12] were all resident in St. Joseph's during the period when [HIA 176] was resident. I believe [SJM 12] was resident in House 2 and [SJM 16] was resident in House 3. [SJM 12] died in [redacted] however she and I kept in touch with me after she left St Joseph's. I have attached marked BD 7 copies of correspondence which [SJM 12] sent me after she left St Joseph's which I believe attest to her positive experiences with us. [SJM 51] was resident in House 3 and later in the Hostel from 13.12.82. She was licensed home in February 1983. In relation to the allegation regarding [SR 260] Sister [SR 260] was a senior member of staff in the early 1980's. I had no knowledge of an allegation which she broke a brush over [SJM 52] and we have no record of a complaint being made about such an allegation. From my knowledge of [SR 260] I find it hard to accept that such an incident took place.

19. In response to paragraph 18, a retreat might have taken place in Montfort House in Monaghan, however we have no record to confirm this. I have no knowledge about the allegation of the theft of altar wine. I also have no knowledge of any allegation that [SR 240] threatened to beat the girls until she found out who had stolen the wine. I find this story very hard to believe and I base this on my knowledge of working with [SR 240] for a long period of time. She was always a caring member of staff towards the girls. I can confirm she carried a bunch of keys as she was the most senior person in charge on site. I have no knowledge of girls being beaten after they owned up to the theft and again I have to say that I find it very difficult to accept that this took place. If it did take place then of course it was very wrong. [redacted] refers to trips to Bushmills in September. I have attached at

file does not record any substantiated issues of child abuse or neglect at this time. The home situation broke down within four weeks of her return from Harberton House, and HIA 176 came into care for the second time at the very end of 1981, initially on the basis of a Place of Safety Order because of further absconding. She was placed in Harberton House as an emergency, but then moved to St Joseph's Training School in Middleton for further assessment, see SJM 11045-11046. An interim Place of Safety Order was granted to the WHSSB on 26.01.82, see SJM 16564 – 16565 and a Fit Persons Order was made to the NIO on 16.02.1982, see SJM 16566 – 16567.

7. Over the next twelve months I was closely involved with the management of this case. The objective at the time was to try and stabilize HIA176, and to build her capacity to cope better with the differences and inconsistencies in her parents. The record shows that HIA's parents obtained a legal separation later in the year. She had frequent visits home, which were monitored. Child Care review meetings were held in St Joseph's Middleton and chaired by the WHSSB, to oversee and agree case planning. The last review I was involved in took place on 01.12.1982, see SJM 11114, and concluded that there was a greater degree of stability in the lives of the parents, that HIA176 had shown increased maturity, that she seemed better able to cope with home, and that there should be a further period of home on trial. At the time of my last involvement in this case at the beginning of 1983 I recall that difficulties were beginning to emerge once more.

8. The case records that I have seen confirm that I had very regular input into this case, including regular contact with HIA176 during her period in St Josephs, Middleton. It is my recollection that my relationship with HIA 176 was positive, although we were not always in agreement. I felt that the environment and input of staff in St Joseph's Middleton was supportive to her at this time, and created a degree of stability which enabled her to be more reflective and realistic about family relationships. The file contains a number of letters from HIA 176 to me written from St Joseph's Middletown in 1982, relating to various issues that she wanted me to address. These letters do not indicate that she felt in any way threatened or compromised in St Joseph's at this time, nor does the file record that I have seen of my contact with her make any reference to this.

file does not record any substantiated issues of child abuse or neglect at this time. The home situation broke down within four weeks of her return from Harberton House, and HIA 176 came into care for the second time at the very end of 1981, initially on the basis of a Place of Safety Order because of further absconding. She was placed in Harberton House as an emergency, but then moved to St Joseph's Training School in Middleton for further assessment, see SJM 11045-11046. An interim Place of Safety Order was granted to the WHSSB on 26.01.82, see SJM 16564 – 16565 and a Fit Persons Order was made to the NIO on 16.02.1982, see SJM 16566 – 16567.

7. Over the next twelve months I was closely involved with the management of this case. The objective at the time was to try and stabilize HIA176, and to build her capacity to cope better with the differences and inconsistencies in her parents. The record shows that HIA's parents obtained a legal separation later in the year. She had frequent visits home, which were monitored. Child Care review meetings were held in St Joseph's Middleton and chaired by the WHSSB, to oversee and agree case planning. The last review I was involved in took place on 01.12.1982, see SJM 11114, and concluded that there was a greater degree of stability in the lives of the parents, that HIA176 had shown increased maturity, that she seemed better able to cope with home, and that there should be a further period of home on trial. At the time of my last involvement in this case at the beginning of 1983 I recall that difficulties were beginning to emerge once more.

8. The case records that I have seen confirm that I had very regular input into this case, including regular contact with HIA176 during her period in St Josephs, Middleton. It is my recollection that my relationship with HIA 176 was positive, although we were not always in agreement. I felt that the environment and input of staff in St Joseph's Middleton was supportive to her at this time, and created a degree of stability which enabled her to be more reflective and realistic about family relationships. The file contains a number of letters from HIA 176 to me written from St Joseph's Middletown in 1982, relating to various issues that she wanted me to address. These letters do not indicate that she felt in any way threatened or compromised in St Joseph's at this time, nor does the file record that I have seen of my contact with her make any reference to this.

1 was?

2 A. I would agree -- I would agree generally with what SR235
3 said, and I would think that it did reflect the
4 personality of the person in charge naturally I suppose,
5 yes.

6 Q. Well, when you arrived in , there was no longer any
7 corporal punishment. The marks system was in place.
8 SR240 was in charge at that stage.

9 A. That's right, yes, yes.

10 Q. You worked very closely with her. Isn't that correct?

11 A. Yes, yes.

12 Q. Now we know from a medical that we have received that
13 she is unable to speak to the Inquiry herself.

14 A. Uh-huh.

15 Q. But having worked very closely with her, I wondered what
16 you could say your experience of her as a manager, first
17 of all, and as a person was.

18 A. Well, I thought she was a very good leader. I thought
19 she was a remarkable person. My very first general
20 staff meeting -- we had a general staff meeting at the
21 beginning of every year at the beginning of September,
22 and I remember thinking afterwards, "You know, this
23 place really is run for the children". That was my
24 sense, and I never changed in that.

25 Q. You heard yesterday it described that she had shouted at

1 you that it has been read, but I was not going through
2 it in any detail -- or anything more that you want to
3 say about St. Joseph's? Now is your opportunity.

4 A. Maybe I did not do justice to SR240, but many of our
5 residents really did -- she loved the children and they
6 loved her. Many of them are still in touch with us.
7 They phone. They visit. They write. It was a good
8 place to work and I believe it was a good place for
9 children.

10 Q. Sister, thank you very much for that. As I say, I have
11 nothing more that I want to ask you, but the Panel
12 Members may have some questions for you. I can see that
13 you are finding it slightly difficult. If you need
14 a break, please just say.

15 A. I'm okay.

16 Q. Thank you, Sister.

17 Questions from THE PANEL

18 CHAIRMAN: Sister, could I just ask you in a little bit more
19 detail about the arrangements for the intensive care
20 unit and the services of a psychologist that were
21 available?

22 A. They were, yes.

23 Q. In a sense it is convenient to do that in the context of
24 HIA198's experience --

25 A. Yes.

1 of her to be honest is that she was always on a diet of
2 lettuce sandwiches. So she was a great one for watching
3 her weight, to be honest. So, no, she wasn't a big
4 woman in any shape physically.

5 Q. Did she impose whatever views she had by force of
6 personality or in any other way?

7 A. I would have thought that her -- because what she valued
8 was the children and us doing the best for the children,
9 she didn't have to enforce her views, her opinions. We
10 all shared those, and I suppose she largely led by
11 example as well. She was hugely respected by both the
12 children and her staff.

13

14

15

16 Working in Middletown, we
17 all shared responsibility. There was never a sense that
18 SR240 or SJM76 or SR234 were better than us or higher up
19 a ladder than us or anything like that. It was as if we
20 all worked together, which in hindsight was an excellent
21 way to work.

22 Q. I think one of the witnesses has said that she did not
23 interfere in the way that each person ran a unit, but
24 she was there to speak to or ask advice from as needed.

25 A. That is correct, Chairman.

1 saying about how she insisted that holidays were good
2 for the girls; that they got food if they'd run away.

3 What other experience did you have of her? What's
4 your overall memory of SR240 and how she affected
5 Middletown, if I can put it that way?

6 A. I think she -- I mean, she was clearly very central to
7 the whole situation. She was very pro the children.
8 An example of that I can give you is Christmas time.
9 I don't think I ever worked as hard in my entire life as
10 I did at Christmas in Middletown, because SR240
11 insisted, like any good parent would do, that you would
12 listen out for what the children were talking about.
13 They might be talking about the latest perfume or
14 jewellery or clothes or things that us older
15 fuddy-duddies wouldn't know about. We had to jot that
16 down and let SR240 know, because that's what those
17 children got for Christmas, along with just a huge
18 amount of things, because I remember having to go to
19 Belfast to buy all these dressing gowns and slippers and
20 bath stuff and all of that.

21 The thing that she insisted on really, which really
22 there were some times it was just I thought beyond the
23 pale, every single last thing had to be wrapped in
24 Christmas paper. It didn't matter how small it was.
25 Should it be just little sweets, little gold coins,

1 whatever it was, every single last thing had to be
2 wrapped in Christmas paper.

3 Then we had to do the whole Santa Claus myth,
4 because she always had a view that most of the children
5 we worked with didn't really have an experience or
6 a memory of Christmas as good. So when the children
7 came over for midnight mass, they used to leave their
8 pillow cases with their names painted on them or written
9 on them or whatever in their individual houses. Then
10 I would be present and then have to sneak off and do
11 this mammoth task of putting all their gifts at each
12 child's chair and then be back into mass as if nothing
13 had happened.

14 Then we would all go over, staff and girls, and be
15 there for the opening of the presents and the tears and
16 the joy, and I associate Christmas with chip butties
17 sadly, because you could be sitting at 2 o'clock in the
18 morning, 3 o'clock in the morning and they were still
19 talking, "How did I get this?" and, you know, it was
20 always a lovely time in that sense for the girls. They
21 had great memories.

22 Then on Christmas Day SR240 and I along with helpers
23 would prepare dinner for the Sisters first and then all
24 the girls and staff came over and they were in the big
25 parlour, as it was, and everything set out beautifully.

1 I used to be starving, dying to get my own dinner, and
2 I was so exhausted. Then we would feed the staff and
3 the girls and we would have fun with them, do you know,
4 playing daft games, whatever it was. Then they wanted
5 to go back to their own units and they would -- then we
6 would have our dinner at that point.

7 So it was those times. She wanted them -- it was
8 about creating memories for them, good memories I think.

9 Q. You also described her as a very fair person.

10 A. Very.

11 Q. You say staff knew where they stood with her.

12 A. Absolutely. She was -- I think it would be fair to say
13 that she expected every one of us to work as hard as we
14 should do, which I think any good employer would want,
15 but she was also extremely fair. It wasn't -- it wasn't
16 an unbalanced type personality. You know, she expected
17 you to do your best for the girls and to do your job,
18 but she was also a very fair human being.

19 Q. You are aware apart from the allegation made against
20 yourself that we have had other allegations made that
21 either a member of the congregation or a member of staff
22 might have struck a girl. Did you ever witness anything
23 like that, for instance?

24 A. Absolutely not. No, never.

25 Q. And the other allegation that we have heard is that

1 whether it was helping them with their homework in the
2 evenings or preparing the evening meals. I would also
3 have been asked and contributed to assessments, you
4 know, of the children, because I would have been on duty
5 with them at significant periods of time. So I would
6 have been -- my opinion would have been sought as well.

7 I was very much involved with children -- SR240 was
8 a great believer in children having a good holiday and
9 there was a tradition of that in Middletown, that each
10 unit went away, the staff along with the children, to
11 specific places. I remember vividly being sent over to
12 the West of Ireland to an outdoor pursuits centre with
13 the children with other members of staff and really
14 having fabulous times on holiday.

15 I was there -- for example, night times if children
16 had absconded, for example, and they did, SR240 --

17 Q. Just pause there, SR247.

18 A. Sorry.

19 Q. I think maybe the Chairman's computer is not working.

20 CHAIRMAN: I'll just carry on I think.

21 MS SMITH: Very well. Sorry, SR247. You were saying?

22 A. If children had absconded, for example, and were being
23 returned by the police during the night, which did
24 happen, SR240 was a great one for having us give the
25 children something to eat when they returned, and, you

sending them to their room. I never witnessed the Sisters slapping, beating or hurting any of the girls.

11. I was put in the lock up once because of fighting with the other girls. The door was not locked. There was a member of staff with me at all times. It was a good place to calm down. I remember being given magazines and puzzles when I was there.

12. I ran away a few times. I had no need to do it as I got out often but the other girls put me up to it. It was just to prove a point. That was the only reason why I did it. Any time I ran away the Police brought me back. I would have gone back into the house and SR 240 would have given off to me and told me not to do it again. I might have been denied a cigarette or lost points but that was it.

13. We were allowed to smoke in St. Joseph's. We were given five cigarettes per day split up between the 12 hours. We got our last cigarette at 9pm at night. Unless our parents gave permission for us to smoke, we weren't allowed to. I already smoked before I went to St. Joseph's and my parents give permission for me to continue to smoke. We were not encouraged to smoke by the Sisters. Once our cigarettes ran out that was it. We bought cigarettes with our pocket money. We were not given any more once they ran out. All the other girls smoked.

14. I never had any problems with the Sisters. The only issues I had were with the other girls. When I had a problem I went to my key worker [REDACTED]

15. I remember SR 240 SR 234 SJM 2 and [REDACTED] They were all very good to me. They had a lot to listen to. It was very stressful for them but they never hurt anyone. I loved my time at St. Joseph's. I think it made me a better person. I was expelled from secondary school and couldn't read or write. I went to school at St. Joseph's and learned to read and write. There were small classes so it was easier to learn. It was an enjoyable experience.

1 up 921, please, we will see her address this allegation
2 in paragraph 4. Obviously she won't have been aware of
3 to deal with the issue about putting you in Coventry, as
4 you describe it, or depriving you of food. We will have
5 to try to deal with that.

6 She had been in St. Joseph's for a long period from
7 '67 and had been the Director from at least '77, if not
8 earlier, and retired in 2000. In fairness to her the
9 only allegations made against her are from you and your
10 sister. Nobody else has ever alleged to the Inquiry or
11 elsewhere that the Inquiry is aware of that they were
12 ever mistreated by SR240. SR240 said to the Inquiry:

13 "In all of these paragraphs HIA376 has alleged that
14 I beat her, slapped her, punched her, pulled her hair"

15 --

16 A. Yes.

17 Q. -- "kicked her and hit her with a large bunch of keys."

18 A. Yes.

19 Q. "The children who came into our care at St. Joseph's
20 were amongst the most damaged and vulnerable girls in
21 society. Many of them had been severely neglected,
22 rejected by their family, physically and sexually abused
23 and often understandably nervous of trusting anyone in
24 authority. During my professional life I have always
25 been totally against any form of abuse of children,

PRIVATE

the more she would beat me. I quickly learned that I had to behave. SR240

SR240 would tell me that my parents didn't want me and that was why I was in Middletown. She would also tell me that I was dirty. The House Mother from House 1, SJM4 and SJM1 told me to keep my mouth shut and my head down and I would be alright.

7. We received pocket money in Middletown. On a Friday we were allowed to go to the village to spend it. I would have spent my pocket money on cigarettes.
8. There was a record book kept in Middletown which recorded our behaviour during the day. I believe the nuns who looked after us in the evening used this record against us. If we misbehaved during the day the nuns would punish us in the evening.
9. A daily task in Middletown was to clean and dust the dormitory. We would have to get up very early to clean and dust before going to Mass. We would not have had breakfast until we returned from Mass. SR243 who is now deceased would inspect the dormitories. She would wear a white glove and run her finger along an area to check if we had cleaned it correctly. If the room was not to her satisfaction she would wreck it, beat us and make us do it again.
10. On a Saturday we were made to clean all day from 9.00am to 6.00pm with one 5 minute break and a lunch break. My hands would have been red raw from the cleaning. Literally all the furniture of the house had to be taken outside to the garden to allow for cleaning. SR244 used to tell me I was a great cleaner. However, I recall on one occasion there was a tea stain in the sink and SR244 SR244 grabbed me by the ears, dragged me to the sink before slapping me across the head. She told me that I would get no tea until it was spotless. I also recall having to polish the wooden floors. I would turn a carpet tile upside down and slide along the floor to make it shine.
11. Another daily duty in Middletown was kitchen duty. I did not like kitchen duty but I always seemed to be put on kitchen duty. This involved washing and peeling

PRIVATE

20. SJM18 was a resident in Middletown. She became pregnant and I recall her being taken away in a car at 3.00am one morning and we never saw her again. To this day I do not know where she was taken.
21. There was another resident in Middletown called SJM19 she came was from the area. She never spoke to anyone and always kept her head down. I recall one day around Christmas time we were being taken to on a minibus. Some of the other girls and I were misbehaving, but SJM19 was not. SR243 stopped the bus and dragged SJM19 off the bus by her hair and beat her.
22. During my time in Middletown the only time I got to speak to my sister was if we were allowed home on weekend leave. Depending on our behaviour we would have been allowed home every other weekend.
23. I recall my social worker SJM20 visiting me in Middletown on about two occasions and another social worker named SJM21 visiting me on one occasion. I was never able to tell them about the beatings I was receiving and how unhappy I was in Middletown because the nuns were always present. I believe I would have been beaten later by the nuns if I had told them everything.
24. I attended the college in when I was at Middletown. I gained A's and B's in my exams. As I was older I was moved to the bungalow at Middletown. The beating from the nuns stopped around this time. I stayed in the bungalow until I was sixteenth. On my sixteenth birthday I was told it was time for me to go.

Life After Care

25. When I was kicked out of the Convent on my sixteenth birthday I returned to live with my father. This lasted one week as he beat me for asking him for money to buy coal so I could have a hot bath. He told me to go and look after myself.
26. I entered into a relationship with a man which turned physically and mentally abusive. I have two children from this relationship. I lost both my children

5.1 *The day beings for the girls when they are called at approximately 8.15 a.m. Between rising and departing for school they have breakfast and carry out their allotted services or chores”*

19. In response to Paragraph 9 and as indicated above, there was not daily Mass in St. Joseph's. I believe that [HIA 376] is referring to our daily assembly. All the girls would have had their breakfast before leaving for assembly and school and this is also confirmed by the 1987 inspection report.

20. I believe the [SR 243] that [HIA 376] is referring to is [SR 243] who was a member of our staff in St. Joseph's and who was one of four people, including [redacted] tragically killed on [redacted] when she was 37 by [redacted] [SR 243] was the fairest most just person I knew and I cannot believe that she would have behaved as [HIA 376] alleges and I certainly do not believe any allegation that she would have beaten any girl. This is completely contrary to my memory of her and I knew her and worked with her for a number of years before she died.

21. At paragraph 10 (SJM – 062) [HIA 376] sets out her recollections of the Saturday routine at St. Joseph's. Again my clear recollections are very different. During the time [HIA 376] was resident I do not recall girls ever cleaning from 9.00 a.m. – 6.00 p.m. On Saturdays some of the houses did a more in-depth clean than others. This really depended on how each house completed their chores during the week. Saturday was always a relaxed morning with the girls sleeping in late, having breakfast and after a period of time there would have been a clean-up lasting no more than an hour. There is no possibility that all the furniture could ever have been moved out of the house to be cleaned. For a start we had some large, heavy

PRIVATE

the more she would beat me. I quickly learned that I had to behave. SR240

SR240 would tell me that my parents didn't want me and that was why I was in Middletown. She would also tell me that I was dirty. The House Mother from House 1, SJM4 and SJM1 told me to keep my mouth shut and my head down and I would be alright.

7. We received pocket money in Middletown. On a Friday we were allowed to go to the village to spend it. I would have spent my pocket money on cigarettes.
8. There was a record book kept in Middletown which recorded our behaviour during the day. I believe the nuns who looked after us in the evening used this record against us. If we misbehaved during the day the nuns would punish us in the evening.
9. A daily task in Middletown was to clean and dust the dormitory. We would have to get up very early to clean and dust before going to Mass. We would not have had breakfast until we returned from Mass. SR243 who is now deceased would inspect the dormitories. She would wear a white glove and run her finger along an area to check if we had cleaned it correctly. If the room was not to her satisfaction she would wreck it, beat us and make us do it again.
10. On a Saturday we were made to clean all day from 9.00am to 6.00pm with one 5 minute break and a lunch break. My hands would have been red raw from the cleaning. Literally all the furniture of the house had to be taken outside to the garden to allow for cleaning. SR244 used to tell me I was a great cleaner. However, I recall on one occasion there was a tea stain in the sink and SR244 SR244 grabbed me by the ears, dragged me to the sink before slapping me across the head. She told me that I would get no tea until it was spotless. I also recall having to polish the wooden floors. I would turn a carpet tile upside down and slide along the floor to make it shine.
11. Another daily duty in Middletown was kitchen duty. I did not like kitchen duty but I always seemed to be put on kitchen duty. This involved washing and peeling

marked **BD 8** a copy of a report from **HIA 176** time at the Runkerry Activity Centre near Bushmills in September 1982. There are diary records to confirm that **HIA 176** mother and stepfather did visit St Joseph's although it was more common for her to go home to them by bus for her weekend leave.

20. I had no knowledge of any allegation prior to reading **HIA 176** statement that **SJM 54** had been beaten by **SR 240**. Again, I find such an allegation very hard to believe based on my knowledge and experience of working with **SR 240**. I remember **SJM 54** when she was at St Josephs. She was a bit of a live wire but I am not aware of any complaint that she bullied any other resident.

21. At paragraph 21 **HIA 176** recalls a Sister **HIA 176** and alleges she "dished out beatings in House 2" and that **HIA 176** witnessed her "hitting a Belfast girl called **SJM 50**". We did have a **SR 275** who was in charge of House 2 at one point. **SR 275** is now dead. As **HIA 176** was resident in House 1 and subsequently House 3 I am not sure how she would have witnessed activities in House 2. Moreover, I can confirm that **SJM 50** was only resident in House 1 for a period of three weeks in 1982 and **SR 275** was not in House 1 at that period of time. From my knowledge of working with **SR 275** I do not believe she would have hit any child.

22. In response to paragraph 22 I can confirm from the diary records that **HIA 176** often went home at the weekend, sometimes with her sister **HIA 376**. The journey home to Derry would often have been by bus and a member of staff would have left them to the bus station at Monaghan and collected them. Weekend leave was always a matter that had to be approved by a girls' social worker and the diary entries confirm that there was very frequent contact between St. Joseph's and **HIA 176** social worker **SJM 79** regarding the issue of weekend leave. This was particularly important because as the entries confirm, the **HIA 176** family situation was not always stable and this was a matter of great concern to the social worker and to the staff of St.

purchased by the girls staff take them shopping, give them advice on suitability, style and sizes". The usual shopping destinations would have been Craigavon, Armagh and Dundalk. We used the local shoe shop in Middletown which was [REDACTED]

18. I can confirm that [REDACTED] SJM 51 [REDACTED] SJM 16 [REDACTED] SJM 12 were all resident in St. Joseph's during the period when [REDACTED] HIA 176 was resident. I believe [REDACTED] SJM 12 was resident in House 2 and [REDACTED] SJM 16 was resident in House 3. [REDACTED] SJM 12 died in [REDACTED] however she and I kept in touch with me after she left St Joseph's. I have attached marked BD 7 copies of correspondence which [REDACTED] SJM 12 sent me after she left St Joseph's which I believe attest to her positive experiences with us. [REDACTED] SJM 51 was resident in House 3 and later in the Hostel from 13.12.82. She was licensed home in February 1983. In relation to the allegation regarding [REDACTED] SR 260 Sister [REDACTED] SR 260 was a senior member of staff in the early 1980's. I had no knowledge of an allegation which she broke a brush over [REDACTED] SJM 52 and we have no record of a complaint being made about such an allegation. From my knowledge of [REDACTED] SR 260 I find it hard to accept that such an incident took place.

19. In response to paragraph 18, a retreat might have taken place in Montfort House in Monaghan, however we have no record to confirm this. I have no knowledge about the allegation of the theft of altar wine. I also have no knowledge of any allegation that [REDACTED] SR 240 threatened to beat the girls until she found out who had stolen the wine. I find this story very hard to believe and I base this on my knowledge of working with [REDACTED] SR 240 for a long period of time. She was always a caring member of staff towards the girls. I can confirm she carried a bunch of keys as she was the most senior person in charge on site. I have no knowledge of girls being beaten after they owned up to the theft and again I have to say that I find it very difficult to accept that this took place. If it did take place then of course it was very wrong. [REDACTED] HIA 176 refers to trips to Bushmills in September. I have attached at

1 Q. What form were the beatings that she engaged in? Was
2 it -- did she use her hand, or did she use keys, or can
3 you remember what she --

4 A. SR235?

5 Q. No, SJM1.

6 A. Oh, SJM1. No. She would have used her hands or
7 anything she had in her hand, so she would have.

8 Q. Were you aware of her striking others than just you or
9 do you only remember her hitting you?

10 A. Well, if she didn't strike you, what she would do --
11 because she was a very heavy chain smoker, SJM1 was, and
12 she was what I would call a country woman. She lived in
13 . If she didn't slap you, she would have made you,
14 you know, get two pieces of carpet and polish the floor
15 in the hall. You would have stood on them with each
16 foot upside down and that's how you would have polished
17 the convent floors. She would have give you, you know,
18 or not given you your tea or not given you your
19 cigarette before you went to bed.

20 Q. So she had other ways as well as hitting?

21 A. Yes, yes.

22 Q. What I was asking you: do you remember her hitting other
23 girls --

24 A. Yes.

25 Q. -- or just you?

Got new

they all

he told anything afterwards. I told her that I would discuss it with [redacted] tomorrow. I talked an awful lot about home and past life there. Got a phone call this evening. Went off to bed early - v. fed up. Took a len sip.

village,

TV. and

on

ol.

Saturday 27th

[redacted] SJM 1 [redacted] HIA 376 [redacted] SJM 12 and [redacted] SJM 8 into the office this afternoon and sorted out the conflict that was going on between them. [redacted] SJM 12 said that as far as she was concerned there was no conflict! It appears that there is some jealousy over a boyfriend. [redacted] HIA 376 said that she felt better afterwards.

Sunday 28th

Good enough for. Spent the day knitting & watching TV.

Monday 29th

Good for - down to school

Tuesday 29th

[redacted] SJM 1 [redacted] HIA 376 told [redacted] that she probably would not be present at her review because there was going to be a lot of different people present there. Was v. concerned about [redacted] SJM 17 not setting up.

Wednesday 30th

Deemed in good for. Down to school.

Thursday 1st Dec

[redacted] HIA 376 in good for. Down to school. Sent the evening knitting.

1 Q. I think other than a suggestion from one other Inquiry
2 witness that she may have called someone a name this is
3 the only allegation that's made against SR235, but
4 that's how you remember her behaving and treating you.

5 A. Yes.

6 Q. You mention in paragraph 17 of your statement at 064 the
7 lady SJM1, who was a member of staff. We saw her
8 dealing with the two girls and you in the office --

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. -- while you were living in House 2.

11 A. Yes.

12 Q. But you say -- and that's the only record I could find
13 of any difficulty she was involved with, but you say in
14 paragraph 17 that she would have given you beatings in
15 House 2.

16 A. Yes.

17 Q. Were you aware of her doing this to other girls other
18 than you?

19 A. She had her favourites. You know, they were her little
20 -- her little pets. I suppose too, you know, when
21 I moved from House 1 to House 2, I was still very
22 headstrong, you know, but I didn't -- that's just the
23 way I had to be, you know, from a child. You know,
24 I didn't know no different, but I didn't deserve the
25 beatings that I got.

1 I think that word might be.

2 "Not a bad child, only for her mouth. Went
3 swimming."

4 I think you would accept that your language left
5 a lot to be desired, if I can put it in those terms,
6 HIA198.

7 A. I did, yes. I was quite vocal on things.

8 Q. Your language was what we would describe as bad language
9 used to --

10 A. Yes, yes, very bad language.

11 Q. -- used -- directed at anybody.

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. Now in your addendum statement at 22713 you make the
14 point in that statement that the reason that you were
15 placed in St. Joseph's was due to your bad behaviour at
16 the time, but that you feel that that was caused because
17 of the fact that -- and I am not telling anything that
18 you haven't already said in your statement elsewhere --
19 that because you had been sexually abused as a child and
20 you felt that you didn't get the justice, as you saw it,
21 at that time, that that led to your behaviours that led
22 you into the self-harming spiral that led you to
23 St. Joseph's, if I can put it that way.

24 A. Yes. I had no specialist care after I disclosed about
25 the abuse, no specialist child care trauma counselling.

relationships and individual work with HIA 198 during the early phase of Social Work intervention with her²⁸

3.3.2. Planning and reviewing work, both for her individually with Sister [REDACTED] and for her parents with Sister [REDACTED] and Dr [REDACTED], during her admission to Orana Children's Home. This was then to continue upon her discharge to the family home;²⁹

3.3.3. Follow up with other services, for example HIA 198 was under the clinical review of Dr [REDACTED] Child and Adolescent Psychiatrist³⁰, and was later involved with [REDACTED], Clinical Psychologist, APRU³¹. A referral for a second psychiatric opinion was also made to Dr [REDACTED] Young People's Centre³²;

3.3.4. Securing a placement at Kinnahalla Young Person's Project;

3.4. Unfortunately, the behaviours that HIA 198 exhibited were such that she placed her own life at significant risk. The final analysis was one, therefore, whereby she required admission to Training School.

3.5. The Applicant also complained, during the course of questions from the Chairman:

*"Social Services had them records there that they could have passed on, that they should have passed on to people that could have helped me, and they never did that"*³³

²⁸ SJM 11322

²⁹ SJM 11360

³⁰ SJM 11411

³¹ SJM 11779

³² SJM 11798

³³ Day 185, pg 30, line 23 – pg 31, line 1

My reason for coming to Middletown was
I kept throwing temper fits and
Wrecking & ripping things I think
I am lucky to be getting out
of Middletown most girls have a
T.S.O & I haven't I wish I could
be getting out Sooner because
the staff kept taking marks of
me for saying bad language

Signed by _____

HIA 198

Group 1

4 of June 1992

1 a reward or a treat."

2 [SR 234], I am not going to call up her
3 statement, but she says that at SJM163 in her response
4 to what you say about that. You were telling me that,
5 in fact, they were used as a reward.

6 A. They were. It was like punishment and reward. If you
7 were bold, badly behaved or bad language or anything,
8 you had cigarettes taken off you, but if the unit was
9 good at the weekend, there was an extra packet of
10 cigarettes given to the whole unit and crisps and
11 chocolate at the weekend, but everybody had been on good
12 behaviour all week for that there to happen.

13 Q. They talk about in their response statement the reward
14 system. You were certainly aware of the reward system.

15 A. Yes.

16 Q. Isn't that right?

17 A. Yes.

18 Q. In fact, they exhibit a letter, which we looked at,
19 which is at 195, where you had written in 1992 about the
20 fact that you hadn't got marks --

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. -- and --

23 A. Because of my language and my behaviour and all, I was
24 constantly fined and punished and, you know ...

25 Q. You missed out --

1 that, HIA198.

2 A. They were used in that there way. It was like
3 a bargaining tool. If a girl had run away, the staff
4 would have, you know, got the other girls to go chase
5 the girl and then they would have given a reward of
6 a cigarette or extra treats, and that was meant, you
7 know, for helping to catch the runaway. It was used as
8 a bargaining tool and as a reward.

9 Q. Just I should have said to you when I was talking about
10 SR247 that the congregation have not received any other
11 complaint of her --

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. -- slapping any other child or abusing any child in any
14 other way.

15 I just want to move on to the ICU, what St. Joseph's
16 called the secure unit, the intensive care unit or the
17 special unit. We know that you were ultimately moved
18 from St. Joseph's to Rathgael and you were put in
19 Shamrock House in Rathgael.

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. Now that was a different sort of place to the ICU in
22 St.~Joseph's. Isn't that right, HIA198?

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. We have heard that, for example, St. Joseph's had two
25 bedrooms for girls, although there was only ever really

was for girls on short term stays/remand. Houses 2 – 4 kept long term residents. There was a school in the grounds of Middletown close to the houses and the girls walked to school every day.

11. HIA 198 recalls at paragraph 22 (SJM – 034) that “everybody smoked” and that cigarettes were used as a “bargaining tool”. She also refers at paragraph 22 to the residents being given a treat such as an extra cigarette if someone had run away from St. Joseph’s. It would be fair to say that a lot of the girls who were admitted to St. Joseph’s smoked. Most of the girls who were admitted were aged between 13 and 15 years and would have already been smokers by the time they came to us. We did not encourage smoking but the reality was if the girls had already developed a smoking habit it was very difficult for us to stop this. Most girls bought cigarettes on a Monday evening with their pocket money and we had a policy that once purchased they were handed in to the house staff where the girls resided and they rationed them out over the course of the following week. It is not correct to say that cigarettes were used as a bargaining tool or as a reward or a treat by staff if a girl who had run away was subsequently returned. With the benefit of hindsight I accept that smoking should not have been permitted.
12. There was an established reward system at St. Joseph’s throughout my period working there. This measured each girl’s behaviour and also the behaviour of the house to which she belonged. At the beginning of the week each girl started with 100 marks and she could lose or gain marks throughout the week. We measured such things as attitude and general behaviour whilst at school and in the house and also whether girls had completed their chores. On Saturday evenings we had the reading of the marks in each house which took place in the presence of the Senior Staff member who was on call for the weekend. When awarding or deducting marks staff tried to be fair as all staff including teaching staff worked at building relationships with the girls. Whilst the reward system was important it was not the only method of

mother would not be an option as she was at risk of sexual abuse. A handwritten note dated 17th June 1993 documents a discussion between HIA 233 and SJM 1 and reference is made to the abuse HIA 233 suffered at home. I have attached the relevant notes which I have marked 'BD7'. We did believe HIA 233 that this abuse had taken place. There was a psychologist working 2-3 days per week in St Joseph's. The ethos in the 1990s was to allow the girls to discuss these issues with the psychologist or their key worker, Team Leader or any member of the Senior Team. HIA 233 file confirms that initially she refused to engage with the psychologist but when she was older she did start to engage in counselling. I am disappointed that HIA 233 perception is that we did not believe her in relation to the abuse as this is not reflected in her file.

32. At paragraph 25 (SJM-026), HIA 233 describes the smoking regime in St Joseph's. Regrettably girls were allowed to smoke. Most of the girls who arrived at St Joseph's were already smokers. The girls purchased cigarettes with their own pocket money. They were then handed into the office and given out at certain times of the day. HIA 233 recollection that cigarettes were handed out 6 times per day is broadly accurate.
33. The reward system at St Joseph's was based solely on a points system. Every Saturday evening each girl was allocated 100 marks. If their behaviour both in the house or at school was not appropriate then they lost marks. If their behaviour was good they were allocated additional marks known as "plusses" which earned them extra pocket money. Every Saturday afternoon each girl was then told how many marks they had left at the end of the week and marks were also allocated generally to the House.
34. If a girl lost a lot of marks then her pocket money would have been reduced. We did not encourage any of the girls to start smoking and it was definitely not our policy to encourage smoking. The general consensus at this time was that most girls had already started to smoke before they arrived and our priority was to deal with behavioural issues and try to implement home and education structure into their lives. At that time preventing them from smoking was not our main priority. With the benefit of hindsight and given the knowledge which is now available in relation to the dangers of smoking, I accept that permitting smoking was not in the best interests of the girls.

PRIVATE

St Joseph's Training School, Middletown (22/08/1994 – 03/11/1994)

21. Children who had committed criminal offences were sent to Middletown so I do not understand why I was sent there. Everybody smoked and used the cigarettes as a bargaining tool.
22. I ran away from Middletown quite frequently. On one occasion SR247 caught me and slapped me across the face. If someone ran away the other residents were given a treat, like an extra cigarette, when the run-away was caught. After I ran away a few times I was placed in the secure unit in Middletown. I only got to see one staff member for one hour a day. The reminder of the time I was locked in my bedroom. I was just fourteen.
23. One of the times I ran away from Middletown I ended up at Daisy Hill Hospital. I was attracted by the lights as I knew I would be safe. I was hungry, tired and cold so I broke into a car looking for money. There was a key in the car so I started the car. I did not know how to drive and ended up crashing the car into a bollard. I was charged with seven separate offences as a result of this incident.
24. During my time in Middletown I was aware of the rumours that SR240 slapped other residents.
25. After I left Middletown on 3rd November 1994 I spent nearly a month in Craigavon Area hospital Adult Psychiatric Unit and then three weeks in a secure unit in St Luke's Hospital, Armagh before I was admitted to Rathgael.

Rathgael Training School, Bangor (22/12/1994 – 20/08/1997)

26. I was initially placed in Rathgael under a Fit Person Order and then a Training School Order was made on 17th February 1995. When I was in Rathgael I was moved around several different houses.
27. Some of the staff in Rathgael were kind and others used to antagonise children to the point that the children required to be physically restrained. There was a

1 have been a staff member or anything?

2 A. It could have been anyone, Chairman. I have no
3 recollection of that incident. I don't know where north
4 side is or if indeed there are fields there. I have no
5 recollection of that.

6 I do -- all I do know is that I never hit HIA198 nor
7 any other child at any stage in my life.

8 Q. Just to be clear, she said what you did was you grabbed
9 her up and whacked her across the face. Then she goes
10 on to say that she remembers that -- just scroll on
11 down -- as clear as day.

12 "It was in the middle of a field. I don't remember
13 that incident there at Craigavon Hospital."

14 Then I told her what your memory is, that the only
15 encounter that you had with her would have been at
16 Craigavon. If we can just scroll on down, please,
17 I asked her was that incident in the field the only time
18 that she was -- that you were involved in her care. She
19 said "No". You would have been around the units. You
20 would have been there:

21 "... and we all knew that she was there, you know,
22 saying 'Hello' to her and anything. She was there.

23 Q. This was the only incident where she slapped
24 you?

25 A. Yes."

1 I used to be starving, dying to get my own dinner, and
2 I was so exhausted. Then we would feed the staff and
3 the girls and we would have fun with them, do you know,
4 playing daft games, whatever it was. Then they wanted
5 to go back to their own units and they would -- then we
6 would have our dinner at that point.

7 So it was those times. She wanted them -- it was
8 about creating memories for them, good memories I think.

9 Q. You also described her as a very fair person.

10 A. Very.

11 Q. You say staff knew where they stood with her.

12 A. Absolutely. She was -- I think it would be fair to say
13 that she expected every one of us to work as hard as we
14 should do, which I think any good employer would want,
15 but she was also extremely fair. It wasn't -- it wasn't
16 an unbalanced type personality. You know, she expected
17 you to do your best for the girls and to do your job,
18 but she was also a very fair human being.

19 Q. You are aware apart from the allegation made against
20 yourself that we have had other allegations made that
21 either a member of the congregation or a member of staff
22 might have struck a girl. Did you ever witness anything
23 like that, for instance?

24 A. Absolutely not. No, never.

25 Q. And the other allegation that we have heard is that

1 at the hospital and you then brought her back after she
2 had been seen by the medical staff. You were telling me
3 about some particular aspect where HIA198 had asked you
4 to mind something for her that really is how you were
5 able to pinpoint being with her --

6 A. Yes.

7 Q. -- at Craigavon Area Hospital.

8 A. That's correct.

9 Q. What she said to us when she spoke to us, and we can
10 look at the transcript of this, if we just go to 7110,
11 and at the bottom of that page what she said was that
12 she did not remember you collecting her from Craigavon
13 Area Hospital. What she did remember was:

14 "... the door had been unlocked for some reason in
15 House 1 and I just toddled down the hill and I went to
16 Armagh. I tried to go to the north side to run away.
17 I was caught in the middle of a field. I had tripped
18 and fallen in the middle of a field",

19 which could have happened. As you say, it was a
20 ploughed-up field. She said that you grabbed her up.

21 "There was a big girl, a big, tall, short,
22 black-haired girl standing beside her and they had got
23 me."

24 Can I ask, first of all, SR247, do you recognise
25 that description of another girl, whether that might

1 they did get extra cigarettes, but children were not
2 used to bring other children back. That is not my
3 experience. The police may have returned them.

4 On occasions -- there were fields up behind
5 St. Joseph's and the girls would have taken off
6 sometimes up over the fields, quite a dangerous pursuit
7 really, given -- given the times that we were in, and
8 the British Army would very often be in those fields and
9 run across as part of their duties, but there were also
10 working farms and there were cattle in those fields and
11 they were ploughed up and they were messy and mucky.

12 So I do remember many, many times walking across
13 fields with the kids, and you just really -- the thing
14 was really if you just walked at a respectful distance
15 from them and let them say all they had to say and then
16 try to engage them in conversation, they did eventually
17 get fed up walking in the fields and we would go back to
18 Middletown then.

19 Q. Just coming on to that, you will know from the
20 transcript of what HIA198 told us -- you thought that
21 the only time you had been engaged with HIA198 that you
22 could remember was when you went to Craigavon Area
23 Hospital to collect her and bring her back from there to
24 St. Joseph's. There was another member of staff with
25 you, as you described in your statement. You met HIA198

1 in August of '94. She has given a statement to the
2 Inquiry, which can be found at 15015. What she says is:

3 "I can only recall one occasion when I was asked to
4 go to Craigavon Area Hospital to collect HIA198 and
5 bring her back to St. Joseph's Training School. I was
6 accompanied by another staff member, a **SJM 71**

7 **SJM 71** She met with HIA198 at the hospital. She
8 was seen by medical/nursing staff and we then brought
9 her back to St. Joseph's with us. At no time did I slap
10 HIA198.

11 I believe that the facts stated in this witness
12 statement are true."

13 She signed that on 22nd January of this year.

14 Now, HIA198, that isn't an occasion -- you don't
15 remember her collecting you from Craigavon Area
16 Hospital, do you?

17 A. No, I don't. I remember as clear as day I had run --
18 the door had been unlocked for some reason in House 1
19 and I just toddled down the hill and I went to Armagh.
20 I tried to go to the north side to run away. I was
21 caught in the middle of a field. I had tripped and
22 fallen in the middle of a field. SR247 grabbed me up.
23 There was a girl, a big, tall, short, black-haired girl,
24 standing beside her and they had got me. SR247 grabbed
25 me up and whacked me across the face. I remember that

1 that, HIA198.

2 A. They were used in that there way. It was like
3 a bargaining tool. If a girl had run away, the staff
4 would have, you know, got the other girls to go chase
5 the girl and then they would have given a reward of
6 a cigarette or extra treats, and that was meant, you
7 know, for helping to catch the runaway. It was used as
8 a bargaining tool and as a reward.

9 Q. Just I should have said to you when I was talking about
10 SR247 that the congregation have not received any other
11 complaint of her --

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. -- slapping any other child or abusing any child in any
14 other way.

15 I just want to move on to the ICU, what St. Joseph's
16 called the secure unit, the intensive care unit or the
17 special unit. We know that you were ultimately moved
18 from St. Joseph's to Rathgael and you were put in
19 Shamrock House in Rathgael.

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. Now that was a different sort of place to the ICU in
22 St.~Joseph's. Isn't that right, HIA198?

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. We have heard that, for example, St. Joseph's had two
25 bedrooms for girls, although there was only ever really

1 A. That's right.

2 Q. -- and over-subscribed.

3 A. That's right, yes.

4 Q. Yes.

5 A. I thought that the psychology services I suppose helped
6 us in a way to deal with some problems, and there were
7 always some problems we couldn't -- we couldn't deal.
8 There were always a few girls for whom --

9 Q. We gather from what you say that the perceived need for
10 psychological help was met by more and more sessions
11 being made available.

12 A. That's right, yes.

13 Q. I see. Thank you very much, Sister.

14 MS DOHERTY: Thanks, Sister. That has been very helpful.

15 I mean, we have heard about the sad death of one of your
16 congregation during the Troubles, but I'm just wondering
17 did the Troubles have any other impact in relation to
18 St. Joseph's?

19 A. Well, I suppose there was an atmosphere of danger at
20 times. I do remember a gun battle between the IRA on
21 one side of us and the army on the other side of us.
22 There were bullet holes in windows. We had a few very
23 narrow escapes, yes. So that was tense, and I remember
24 -- although SR240 always tried to negotiate with the
25 army commander that the soldiers wouldn't be on our

1 as a result.

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. You were brought back.

4 Paragraph 24 you say that during your time at
5 Middletown you were aware of rumours that SR240 slapped
6 other residents.

7 A. Yes.

8 Q. I asked you: had you ever witnessed that yourself?

9 A. No, I had never witnessed SR240, but she would have
10 roared and shouted, you know, more than -- I had never
11 seen her physically assault anybody, but I was aware of
12 the rumours of her doing it.

13 I think -- I remember one time I was down -- there
14 was a roll call and I was talking to this girl who
15 I remember. Her name was . She told me about
16 the rumours and about SR240 hitting.

17 Q. But you never saw that yourself?

18 A. No.

19 Q. And she certainly never hit you --

20 A. No.

21 Q. -- or struck you in any way?

22 A. No.

23 Q. She may have given off to you because of the language
24 you were using --

25 A. Yes.

sending them to their room. I never witnessed the Sisters slapping, beating or hurting any of the girls.

11. I was put in the lock up once because of fighting with the other girls. The door was not locked. There was a member of staff with me at all times. It was a good place to calm down. I remember being given magazines and puzzles when I was there.

12. I ran away a few times. I had no need to do it as I got out often but the other girls put me up to it. It was just to prove a point. That was the only reason why I did it. Any time I ran away the Police brought me back. I would have gone back into the house and SR 240 would have given off to me and told me not to do it again. I might have been denied a cigarette or lost points but that was it.

13. We were allowed to smoke in St. Joseph's. We were given five cigarettes per day split up between the 12 hours. We got our last cigarette at 9pm at night. Unless our parents gave permission for us to smoke, we weren't allowed to. I already smoked before I went to St. Joseph's and my parents give permission for me to continue to smoke. We were not encouraged to smoke by the Sisters. Once our cigarettes ran out that was it. We bought cigarettes with our pocket money. We were not given any more once they ran out. All the other girls smoked.

14. I never had any problems with the Sisters. The only issues I had were with the other girls. When I had a problem I went to my key worker [REDACTED]

15. I remember SR 240 SR 234 SJM 2 and [REDACTED] They were all very good to me. They had a lot to listen to. It was very stressful for them but they never hurt anyone. I loved my time at St. Joseph's. I think it made me a better person. I was expelled from secondary school and couldn't read or write. I went to school at St. Joseph's and learned to read and write. There were small classes so it was easier to learn. It was an enjoyable experience.

PRIVATE

14. I went to school every weekday from the ages of 4 until I left at 16 but I didn't learn anything. The teachers I remember were SR250 and SR249 SR249. There were no lay teachers at the school. Both these nuns beat me when I couldn't pronounce my words. I kept getting my letters and my words confused, for example, instead of "God bless you", I wrote "God blast you". They beat me for that mistake but I can't remember who beat me. I still can't read or write. The nuns did not help me to learn. They just left me at the back of the classroom. We were taught with the children from the town and although the nuns beat us, they did not beat those children.
15. I vaguely remember being ill and being left by myself in bed in my dormitory. I don't remember being taken to a doctor or getting any medicine on this occasion. I don't remember a nurse in the convent or a sick bay. I broke my arm once when was about 15. I was at school and I was leaning back in my chair and fell over. The nuns did take me to hospital in [REDACTED] and I was there for one ~~or two~~ days. *My arm was set in plaster of paris.* HIA 249
16. The nuns took us on holiday every year to [REDACTED]. We would go there as a group. I also remember having to cook and clean while we were there.
17. On one occasion Inspectors from Stormont came to look around the convent. I was about 9 or 10. They asked me 'Who made the Hail Mary?' I told them 'St Joseph'. I was beaten for saying this after they left. I remember that day I was waiting with the other girls in the refectory near a table where some meals were laid out. We ate them as we thought this food was for us but it was for the nuns. We got a terrible beating because of this but at least we did not go to bed hungry that day. We didn't get stars/marks for good behaviour for a while after that.
18. My father visited us at least every month for the whole time I was in the convent. He came on his bicycle from [REDACTED] to Armagh. My mother, my [REDACTED] and my half sister, [REDACTED] came to visit as well from time to time. We were not allowed to say hello or hug our visitors. We were taken in one at a time to see my parents; the nuns did not allow us to spend time

HIA 249

25. In relation to paragraph 6 (SJM-068) the girls were required to do laundry but I am not sure the number of hours or age range of girls who worked in the laundry. Sister SR 249 worked in the laundry on a full time basis. I also remember that if a girl had finished school they may have done some laundry but I do not recall the girls working in laundry before school. The laundry only serviced the needs of the orphanage and the convent and it was not used by the public.
26. In 1958, the girls did not go to Mass every day. The girls went to Mass on a Sunday and on holy days. I accept that the girls were asked to prayer and I believe there was morning and night prayers. I cannot confirm or deny if the girls were required to clean the chapel but I do not recall this happening in 1958. There was a Priest called SJM 28 but he was a priest of the Armagh diocese based in the Parochial House in Middletown village. He may have said Mass in the convent but that would have been the public Mass at which the entire parish community would attend. If SJM 28 had slapped HIA 249 it would have happened in front of the entire congregation.
27. Meals for the girls were served in the dining room which was on the ground floor of the orphanage. It was not known as the refectory in 1958. I do not recall meals being silent or girls being banned from talking to each other. If children were forbidden from talking during meals and then caned for talking then I apologise that such a harsh regime was implemented.
28. In paragraph 7 (SJM-069) HIA 249 states that she was beaten from time to time by SR 249, SR 251, SR 237, SR 250 and SR 252. I do recall that SR 237 who was the Sister in charge of the orphanage, was quite strict. I remember that she had a cane and to the best of my recollection, I do believe that it was a long, thin bamboo cane. I do not recall each of the Sisters carrying this type of cane and I have no memory of SR 252 carrying a ruler. Rather, my recollection is that the cane was kept in SR 237 office. The punishment book confirms that HIA 249 had the following punishments:-
- 17th September 1947, untidy work done in the classroom – had to repeat work several times;
 - 23rd June 1948, showed bad temper – made to apologise;
 - 12th March 1949, showed bad temper when corrected – made to apologise;
 - 16th January 1950, insubordination – put away from class and deprived of fruit;
 - 6th March 1951, insubordinate – deprived of music and made to apologise;

1 a priest, and you give the name Father SJM36 who came
2 to the convent occasionally. Now we were discussing the
3 fact that nobody has ever been able to find any record
4 of a Father SJM36 coming to St. Joseph's and I was
5 wondering if you might have got the name wrong, but
6 that's the name you remember.

7 A. Yes, yes.

8 Q. You say:

9 "He would make general comments to us in passing,
10 for example, 'I hope you are behaving yourselves for the
11 nuns'. He never asked us how we were. I remember once
12 I was with a group of girls and he slapped me on the
13 head for no reason. I think he just hit me because
14 I was the closest to him."

15 A. Yes.

16 Q. You say you were just playing outside and he was on his
17 way into the convent. Is that right?

18 A. That's right.

19 Q. Then you are talking here in paragraph 11 -- you say:

20 "Occasionally we were given better clothes to wear
21 and the nuns were nicer to us than usual."

22 You say:

23 "I now know that this was just because people from
24 the government were inspecting us. These clothes were
25 taken from us once the inspection was over. The

1 well, you know.

2 Q. They would have come over from the convent?

3 A. The con... -- yes, yes.

4 Q. Was this slapping done in full view of all of them?

5 A. Yes. I got slapped, yes, because I was dressed
6 inappropriately, like.

7 Q. You were -- you were able to mention to me a surname
8 that you thought it may have been.

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. I am not going to get you to name that now.

11 A. No.

12 Q. What I am going to do is get Ms Dougan just to write it
13 on a bit of paper. I am going to give it to you just so
14 you can confirm that's it and then we will give it to
15 the Panel, because it is not a name that has come up --

16 A. Yes.

17 Q. -- from my understanding to date. I will just get
18 Ms Dougan to hand that to you just now. (Handed.)

19 A. Yes. Yes.

20 Q. I will just get Ms Dougan to give that name to the
21 Members of the Panel, but you were explaining to me he
22 was an old man --

23 A. Yes, he was, yes.

24 Q. -- was your recollection.

25 A. He was an old man, yes.

had with a priest was attending Sunday Mass. There would have been very few circumstances or opportunity for close or one on one contact between each of the girls and the priest. In addition every Sunday Mass was attended by members of staff from St. Joseph's. I have checked and can confirm that we have no record of any complaint being made to St. Joseph's about a slapping incident involving HIA 376 and a priest.

12. Ref SJM – 061 Paragraph 6 is correct that SJM 1 was the house mother in House 2 during HIA 376 period of residence. SJM 1 formal title at this time was Senior Residential Social Worker for House 2. I can also confirm there was a reward system at St. Joseph's which was based on a points system. Every Saturday evening each girl was allocated 100 marks. If their behaviour both in the house or in the school was inappropriate then they lost marks. If their behaviour was good then they were allocated additional marks known as "plusses" which earned them extra pocket money. Every week each girl was then told how many marks they had left at the end of the week and marks were also allocated generally. The reading of the marks in each house was done collectively with all the girls from the house there and in the presence of the senior staff member who was on call for the weekend, the house mother and any other member of staff for the house who was on duty. If a girl lost a lot of marks then her pocket money would have been reduced.

13. The Friday night treat which HIA 376 refers to (SJM – 061) would have applied to all the girls in the house regardless of whether they had lost marks. As I said above the reward system earned the girls pocket money which was then handed out to each girl on Monday. The Friday or Saturday night treat (it may have been one or other or both depending on which house the girl resided in) was a big part of the weekend routine and involved the girls being allowed to stay up late to watch TV or a movie and having treats such as sweets, crisps and lemonade. If the staff allowed an extra

PRIVATE

arts and crafts. In her class, we just made gollywogs or knitted. As a treat, she would reward you with cigarettes. [SJM46] was the maths teacher. Her idea of teaching maths was to play bingo and we would get cigarettes for a line or a full house. [SJM47] taught cookery but if you didn't want to cook you could watch two films instead. We watched the same two films, 'One flew over the cuckoo's nest' and 'Calamity Jane', for the two years I was there. [SJM48] was the music teacher but we would just sing songs in her class and [SR259] taught PE. The only male member of staff was the priest. I think he was called [SJM49]. We only ever saw him on a Sunday. He was a horrible man. I remember he smacked a girl called [SJM50] on the face when she went up to receive the Sacrament because she wore red lipstick in the chapel. He was a small man and I remember he was old.

17. We did not wear a uniform. There was a local clothes store where we went to get our clothes. There was no choice and we had to take what we were given. Everybody wore corduroy skirts and sweatshirts. I remember we were taken to [redacted] for our shoes. We all wore desert boots. I made friends with the other girls from Derry. We stuck together. There was [SJM51], [SJM16], [SJM12] and my twin sister [HIA376], [SJM16] and [SJM12] are dead now. [SJM51] lives in Derry. I am no longer in contact with her. We would all comfort each other. I remember we came back from Church one day and [SR260] broke a brush over [SJM52]'s back. We had been carrying on the night before, just probably chatting and one of the residential workers, [redacted], had spoken to [SR260]. [SR260] was waiting at the door and [SJM52] was the first through the door and was punished. I thanked God that I had not walked through the door first that day.

18. We were taken to a retreat once in Milford House in Armagh. A few of the girls from Belfast broke in to the retreat house and stole some altar wine. We were all lined up by [SR240] and she said she would beat us all until she found out who stole the wine. [SR240] was the anti-Christ. She always carried round a bunch of keys because everywhere she went she was always unlocking the doors. She would have come up behind you with a bunch of keys in her hand and dug her knuckle into your back and say things like, 'Are you behaving

you and demand the cleaning be repeated. Not only is this not corroborated but her sister attributes this behaviour to another Sister.

48. The Sisters would wish it noted that this is a particularly upsetting allegation given their great affection for this lady and her tragic death at a young age.

She then makes an allegation regarding having her ears pulled, on a repeated basis, as a result of a tea-stained sink. She asserts this has left a life-long phobia in relation to physical contact with her ears and intrusive recollections regarding same which have affected her relationship with her family (HE 187/78). Her statement refers to one incident only and does not suggest the lasting consequences as described above (SJM062 Paragraph 10).

At (HE 187/81) she described a beating following return from hospital and an overdose. This is not in her statement (SJM063 Paragraph 15).

She describes being placed in a car boot and remaining there even after her detection by a British soldier at a border checkpoint. Aside from the improbable nature of this assertion we ask the Inquiry to note the failure of her sister, a passenger in the car, to recall this shocking event.

In her statement at SJM 063 she recalls a practice of not being allowed to communicate with her parents when they visited. In her evidence this became a single incident (HE 187/93 Line 18) and it is not an incident or practice raised by her or her parents with her Social Worker.

Likewise the general assertions of separation from her sister are not supported in the contemporaneous documents, the lack of regular home visits and indeed may be innocently explained by the contemporaneous evidence of a difficult relationship existing between them at that time in their lives.

The Inquiry is asked to consider these allegations, in particular that of her being punished following her sister's pregnancy, against the fact of her and her sister's return, after discharge, to stay at St. Joseph's with the infant together with the contemporaneous documentary evidence supporting this. (HE 187/99 Line 10).

49. HIA 176:

Made a variety of unsupported allegations such as teachers rewarding students with cigarettes (SJM 474) and having access to only two films over her entire residency of which one, "One Flew Over the Cuckoos Nest", was then rated "X". This film features a secure mental facility, severely disturbed characters, self-harm, other inappropriate content. We must observe that, apart from being uncorroborated, this allegation may strike the Inquiry as so wholly unlikely as to be impossible of belief.

As noted, her account also differs in several significant aspects from her sister's.

She makes a specific complaint of assault on SJM 50 by a Priest in church which is not supported by SJM 50 herself, who made no allegations against St. Josephs while having given evidence against another Institution. (SJM 474, 187/122, Line 17). This individual is also alleged to have been assaulted by SR 244 (SJM475 Paragraph 21), yet made no such allegation herself.

50. HIA 233: had no complaint regarding St. Joseph's saying it was "great craic" and that she "loved it" (HE 185/37-38).

Her reference to being called an "illegitimate b---" appears to coincide with being called an "ill-reared b---" by another girl, recorded at the time and noted to the Inquiry at (HE 185/39-

PRIVATE

10. She brought me to a store room after she finished beating me and gave me some sanitary napkins and a girdle but never really explained anything about sex or puberty to me. I ran away a few days after this beating because the conditions were so bad. I didn't get far because I didn't know the way home to [REDACTED] and I had nowhere to go. In the end, I had to go back to the convent and I remember being beaten again when I came back.
11. Two of the older girls [SJM29] and [SJM30] bullied the younger girls. I remember both these girls started bullying me when I was about 13 and they were about 15. They would look at my breasts and make fun of my body. We were bathed on a Tuesday and this would usually happen then. Once I was getting washed in the toilet area on my own and [SJM30] came in. She touched me on my breasts as I was getting washed and made fun of me. Then she sang a song to me 'Little things mean a lot'. I don't remember these girls hitting me but they would both just touch me on my upper body and make fun of it.
12. There was no one I could have reported this to because I was afraid the nuns would beat me. There is a plot in the garden at Middletown convent and three girls are buried up there. [SJM31] was sent to St Luke's. She [SJM33] ran away and drowned in St Luke's river. The other two [SJM32] and [SJM31] committed suicide. [SJM33] also died. I knew those girls as they used to eat at the same table as me. They were a couple of years older than me but we weren't friends. They were around 14 or 15 when they died and I was about 13. They just vanished and no-one ever said anything about what happened to them.
13. I remember when I was about 9 Middletown Barracks was blown up in an explosion. The girls in my dormitory heard the explosion and we were all very afraid. We thought the noise was made by ghosts. An older girl in the dormitory, [SJM34] told us 'there is somebody coming for us'. She prayed to the Devil and she scared us. [SR237] beat us that night and made us kneel on the stairs all night praying.

HIA 249

HIA 249

PRIVATE

her about the ill-treatment as I knew she would report it back to the nuns. In my eyes she was a nun without a habit.

30. Not only did we have physical abuse in the home but mental also. It was humiliating and degrading. We were made line up and show the nuns the gussets of our underwear. If it was dirty or marked we were punished. When a girl took her period it was never explained to her and asking for a sanitary towel was a procedure.

Middletown Remand Home (In/around 1967 – In/around 1970)

31. We were in with the criminal element at Middletown so you had to watch your back. The nuns there were also horrendous. I recall when I arrived I heard screaming as some girl was in the bath being scrubbed with a deck scrubber, cleanliness was next to godliness and I remember that screaming and thinking to myself that I had gone from bad to worse. The girls were in there because either their parents could not cope with them or they had been sent by the criminal court so you had to watch your back in case they attacked you or stole your belongings from right under your nose. My sister made friends easily but I did not mix well with people and did not trust many people. I was often bullied. The abuse in Middletown was awful but for some reason you expect that in a remand home but you do not expect it in an orphanage.

SR239 [REDACTED] was a young nun there and she was nice to us but SR238 [REDACTED] was another nightmare. I was in her dormitory and you got slapped, beaten and punched by her regularly. There was no-one I could think of in life that I could have gone to for help, no-one who would have believed me or done anything for me.

32. We also tried to run away from Middletown but it was out in the sticks so it was harder to run away and you had to keep to the fields. On one occasion we ran away with the help of the other girls who all tied their bed sheets together to make a rope that we could use. We got as far as Derry and met a guy called [REDACTED] who had escaped from borstal. He put me in touch with [REDACTED] who was an up and coming MP then. She listened to my story and I begged her not to send me back to the home but

1 by ambulance on 13th April 1969 and being there for
2 three days. I think we can see that at -- yes, I think
3 it is at SJM895. You were taken to hospital in
4 Dungannon, which you see there, just on 13th. It is
5 obviously April. It says:

6 "HIA161 went to hospital in Dungannon by ambulance
7 at about 10.00 pm."

8 Do you see that?

9 A. Yes. I remember an ambulance coming once after I'd been
10 beaten up and I thought that I had broken my nose.

11 Q. When you say beaten up, that was by another girl,
12 HIA161?

13 A. By another girl, yes, yes.

14 Q. You don't remember the name of the girl or anything?
15 No?

16 A. I don't, but some of her friends joined in. So it
17 was -- there was like a school -- a convent band. Some
18 of us had to play accordion and some of us had to play
19 violin. It was compulsory that you played something.
20 As I went in to the music -- to do the music that night,
21 I was just set upon by this particular girl. Now the
22 seniors there, the older ones, they would have had
23 priorities on sitting on chairs whereas like the juniors
24 would have had to sit wherever, and I may have sat on
25 the wrong chair or somebody's chair or whatever, but

1 Q. -- and your behaviour disimproved. The congregation
2 have told us that they always discouraged fighting and
3 arguments between girls. Was that your experience? If
4 two girls were fighting, did the Sisters try to break it
5 up, for example?

6 A. Sometimes; sometimes not. It depended who was fighting.
7 Sometimes they'd turn a blind eye to it. Sometimes they
8 would break it up if they didn't like the way the fight
9 was going, you know. It would just -- it would just
10 depend, but you could get beaten up quite badly and
11 a nun would be on duty.

12 Q. They have also described SR238 as a very small
13 and slight woman. Was that your memory of her?

14 A. Yes.

15 Q. And they said -- I was asking you, "Did any of the other
16 girls witness the beatings that you sustained at her
17 hands?"

18 A. Yes. The other girls would have witnessed it, because
19 she was in a cell -- what was called the nun's cell
20 where they slept at the bottom of the dormitory in one
21 of the little corners of the dormitory. She used to
22 make us lie in bed at night with her hands crossed over
23 our chest like that in case we died in the night so our
24 hands were crossed and lying dead still. I remember
25 lying like that. I was very afraid of this nun. She

PRIVATE

Middletown (approx 1981)

3. I was aged thirteen when I went to Middletown. I was placed in the committal House known as House 1. The House Mother was called [SJM4] I cannot recall her second name. She was a very large woman.
4. I was taken to the dormitory by a member of staff [SJM6]. The sleeping arrangements were cubicles with a draw curtain. [SJM4] the House Mother was also present. [SJM4] hit me on the ear with her hand which tossed me down the corridor when I asked to see my sister. She told me that I would have it hard in Middletown because I was bad.
5. After spending time in House 1 (Committal) I was placed in House 2. My sister was in House 3. My sister and I were also separated during school, however I did see her during Mass in the mornings. We had to attend Mass every morning. During Mass we were told we had to pray very hard to make us good and for God to forgive us. The Priest was not a nice person. On one occasion I recall him slapping me on the face. I also remember talk between the other residents that he was inappropriately touched girls, however, this never happened to me.
6. [SJM1] was the House Mother in House 2. She lived in [] and she was very strict. There was a point system used in House 2. We were expected to get one hundred points per week. If we got less than one hundred points we would have your cigarette allowance cut and our name read out on a Friday night when we would all have been called into the living room by the nuns. All the residents had to get one hundred points or everyone in the house suffered by losing the Friday night treat. The Friday night treat was given out by [SR235]. We would be given chocolate bars and extra cigarettes. On several occasions I would have been beaten by the other girls called [SJM8] [SJM8] and [SJM12] in House 2 because I did not get one hundred points. I would also have been beaten by the nuns for not getting one hundred points. [SR240] in particular would give me terrible beatings. She was a petite lady but brutal. She carried a large bunch of keys that she used to hit us with. She would also kick me and punch me with her knuckles and fists. I believe [SR240] was psychotic and enjoyed beating me. The more I cried

HIA

PRIVATE

2

had with a priest was attending Sunday Mass. There would have been very few circumstances or opportunity for close or one on one contact between each of the girls and the priest. In addition every Sunday Mass was attended by members of staff from St. Joseph's. I have checked and can confirm that we have no record of any complaint being made to St. Joseph's about a slapping incident involving HIA 376 and a priest.

12. Ref SJM – 061 Paragraph 6 is correct that SJM 1 was the house mother in House 2 during HIA 376 period of residence. SJM 1 formal title at this time was Senior Residential Social Worker for House 2. I can also confirm there was a reward system at St. Joseph's which was based on a points system. Every Saturday evening each girl was allocated 100 marks. If their behaviour both in the house or in the school was inappropriate then they lost marks. If their behaviour was good then they were allocated additional marks known as "plusses" which earned them extra pocket money. Every week each girl was then told how many marks they had left at the end of the week and marks were also allocated generally. The reading of the marks in each house was done collectively with all the girls from the house there and in the presence of the senior staff member who was on call for the weekend, the house mother and any other member of staff for the house who was on duty. If a girl lost a lot of marks then her pocket money would have been reduced.

13. The Friday night treat which HIA 376 refers to (SJM – 061) would have applied to all the girls in the house regardless of whether they had lost marks. As I said above the reward system earned the girls pocket money which was then handed out to each girl on Monday. The Friday or Saturday night treat (it may have been one or other or both depending on which house the girl resided in) was a big part of the weekend routine and involved the girls being allowed to stay up late to watch TV or a movie and having treats such as sweets, crisps and lemonade. If the staff allowed an extra

Fri. 18th Nov.

Pleasant + in good form. Got new shoes this pm.

Sat. 19th Nov.

In good form - enjoyed running all the Siskit's in house to day.

he told
I was
talked
past
evening
look

Sun 20th In good form.

Mon 21st Usual chatty self, went to village, watched TV and went to Gym.

Saturday
Went me

Tues 22nd Form still good, watched TV and went for a swim.

out the
there, he
concerned
there is
said the

Wed 23rd Down to school in good form

And
good
of water

Thurs 24th

HIA 376

in good form - down to school.

Friday 25th

HIA 376

was visited today by her stepfather and was quite emotional about the visit. Told me this evening that [redacted] is on her back all the time also [redacted] who Dad came into the house today. [redacted] kept playing "the Dummy Record" over and over again. She said that she has ignored [redacted] of their remarks for a long time now but she really feels like striking her. She asked about her "Review" and if she could be present and if she would

SJM 12

HIA 376

SJM 12

SJM 12

SJM 1

probably
because
different

Wed
Deemed

HIA 376

Sent

Got new

they all

he told anything afterwards. I told her that I would discuss it with [redacted] tomorrow. I talked an awful lot about home and past life there. Got a phone call this evening. Went off to bed early - v. fed up. Took a len sip.

SJM 1

village,

TV and

on

ol.

Wednesday 27th

SJM 1

HIA 376

SJM 12

Took [redacted] and [redacted] into the office this afternoon and sorted out the conflict that was going on between them. [redacted] said that as far as she was concerned there was no conflict! It appears that there is some jealousy over a boyfriend. [redacted] said that she felt better afterwards.

Thursday 28th

Good enough for. Spent the day knitting & watching TV.

Monday 28th

Good for - down to school

Tuesday 29th

SJM 1

HIA 376

Told [redacted] that she probably would not be present at her review because there was going to be a lot of different people present there. Was v. concerned about [redacted] not setting up.

Wednesday 30th

Deemed in good for. Down to school.

Thursday 1st Dec

HIA 376

[redacted] in good for. Down to school. Spent the evening knitting.

1 physically beating you?

2 A. I was too scared, because I knew I would get worse.

3 Q. Those are the only entries I can find about difficulties
4 between you and those two girls, and I think at times
5 they were also friendly with you, because I think on one
6 occasion you had run off together. Would that be right?

7 A. On the way back from our weekend in Derry we got off at
8 Omagh, off the bus, and we should not have. We should
9 have been going straight to Monaghan, where we were
10 going to get picked up. We got off the bus and we were
11 missing for a few days, so we were, and, you know,
12 I wouldn't say -- now SJM8 wasn't there. SJM12 was
13 there, so she was, and another lady was there, myself,
14 but at that time she would have backed down a bit,
15 because she would have been coming back, you know, from
16 Derry with a lot of Derry girls or Omagh girls that were
17 getting on the bus, you know. So, you know, that did
18 happen. I remember we absconded and we didn't go back
19 and the police picking us up.

20 Q. I think you were on weekend leave --

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. -- and got off at Omagh when you shouldn't have.

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. I think it was the next day probably from the record
25 that the police brought you back.

WITNESS STATEMENT

To Whom It May Concern

I [REDACTED] SJM 8 will say as follows

1. I received a letter on 1st February asking me to contact the Historical Institutional Abuse Inquiry, asking me to contact them as my name had come up in an enquiry. Upon calling the H.I.A, I had been informed that an allegation had been made against me, further to my telephone conversation with the H.I.A I was sent a brief outline of the allegation made and the name of the person making the allegation.

Here is my response to the allegation made, firstly this alleged incident happened 35 years ago when I was 13 years old, it is very hard to recall every detail of my 3 years as a resident in St. Josephs Training School, Middletown.

2. I am struggling to put a face to the name [REDACTED] HIA 376, there was a lot of girls in St. Joseph's at the time. I am finding it very hard to believe that I would physically beat anyone on one occasion never mind several occasions, I am strongly disagreeing with what this lady is saying. I do believe that there was a lot of bitching and bickering going on given the fact St. Josephs was for girls ranging in age from 13yrs old up.
3. I am also struggling with this lady's picture of life in St. Josephs, while it was no holiday camp, it was an ok place to be living, given that we couldn't be at home with our family. I would also like to say that I was never subjected to nor did I ever witness any such punishments issued by the sisters or any other staff member, its most certainly not the St. Josephs that I remember.

I believe that the facts stated in this witness statement are true

[REDACTED] SJM 8

03/02/2016

PRIVATE

periods were and I woke up one morning and did not know what had happened. I thought I had wet the bed. When I refused to get out of bed, [REDACTED] SR243 was very good and went downstairs and brought me up a packet of sanitary towels. However, she gave me the packet of sanitary towels and told me to clean myself up and nothing else was said about periods or explained to me. During my time in Middletown, my social worker was [REDACTED] SJM56 I only remember him visiting once or twice. I only saw him if he had to take me to court. I never saw anybody else visiting to enquire about our welfare.

24. For those two years, I did not feel safe. There was a lot of physical abuse from staff and bullying from the other girls. I was bullied by two of the Belfast girls called [REDACTED] SJM54 and [REDACTED] SJM57. [REDACTED] SJM57 was a big girl and I was a tiny thing. They would have called me names, pushed me about and been nasty to me. I would have been quiet and stayed neutral which is why I was a target. I felt safe talking to the residential worker, [REDACTED] SJM43. She was kind to me but I could not tell her or any of the staff because I would have feared they would have punished the girls who were bullying me and then they would have made my life even more miserable. I felt let down by the nuns and the residential workers. I know there were girls there who sniffed glue. It was not like a children's home. Something was always kicking off and I had to grow up very quickly.

25. When I was sixteen, the nuns told me I was leaving Middletown. It was around May time. They drove me to my step-father's house and my mother was not there. My mother was subjected to domestic violence from my step-father and ended up moving to a flat in the [REDACTED] Derry. My step-father started beating me more or less straight away when he was drunk and I would go up and sleep on a sofa in my mother's flat. As far as I understood, the welfare did not want anything to do with me anymore because I was sixteen.

HIA 233

I was up in the pool changing
Room's when the whole
thing started. [REDACTED] called
me & [REDACTED] & ill-raised
"Bastards" then [REDACTED]
ran out of the pool &
down to house 3 - I went
after [REDACTED] and went
up house 3 stairs, into
her room and grabbed
her by the hair and
~~knocked~~ hit her in the
face with my knee.
[REDACTED] & [REDACTED] grappled
me off her and then
I went out off house 3
and [REDACTED] & I went
down to school and I
told [REDACTED] what happened.
[REDACTED] filed [REDACTED]

HIA 376

HIA 233

twice. [SND 466] was [HIA 176] first social worker however our records confirm from a review meeting on 18th March 1983 that [SJM 79] then took over the [] family case from [SND 466]. The records from the house diaries for [HIA 176] period at St. Joseph's confirm that there was very significant contact between [HIA 176] and her social worker [SJM 79] and staff at St. Joseph's. On occasions this was weekly contact with [SJM 79] contacting staff directly and also speaking with [HIA 176] both at meetings and by telephone. Between 1982 and 1984 there was also a formal review every three months involving staff from external agencies such as social workers together with residential staff in relation to each girl. The St. Joseph's Board of Management also had a Licencing Committee to review each child's case each quarterly. The Licencing Committee was made up of 8 people. The girls had the opportunity of writing their own report for their meeting with the Licencing Committee. The Committee then scrutinised the plan for the young people and made recommendations to the Board of Management.

25. In relation to paragraph 24 [HIA 176] refers to the feeling of not being safe during her two years at St. Joseph's. She refers to a lot of physical abuse from staff and bullying from other girls. I am not aware of any complaint from [HIA 176] regarding physical abuse from staff and bullying prior to receiving her witness statement. She refers to being bullied by two Belfast girls [SJM 54] and [SJM 57]. I can confirm that [SJM 54] and [SJM 57] were resident in St. Joseph's between 12.08.81 -25.04.1984 (PC) and 28.10.81-10.07.1984 (GJ). [SJM 54] was resident in House 3 and [SJM 57] was resident in House 2. I am distressed that [HIA 176] recalls being bullied. The girls at St. Joseph's rightly expected to be safe from physical attack while they were in our care. The staff at St Joseph's were conscious of the background and needs of each of the girls and were vigilant about bullying. Bullying was never condoned in St. Joseph's and in my experience would have been dealt with immediately by the House staff. I can find no record of [HIA 176]

what they do, there is ample opportunity for freedom of action.

- 5.5 A daily newspaper is delivered throughout the week and one or two papers are taken on Sundays. In addition teenage magazines, such as "Jackie" are available to the girls. With the exception of house 1, the girls are free to write and receive uncensored letters and make and receive telephone calls between 5.00 pm and 10.00 pm each evening. They are encouraged to have their boyfriends to visit. In the case of the hostel the residents there make use of the pay phone in the staff flats.
- 5.6 House 1, because of its role as a reception/assessment, unit has a slightly different policy in relation to telephone calls and letters. In this house girls are not encouraged to make telephone calls. They can receive calls provided that the staff felt such calls would not be detrimental to the girl. If a recently admitted girl is unsettled or anxious she is allowed to make a call home but seemingly it has been the experience of staff that telephone calls can be unsettling, some intentionally so, and this has caused girls to abscond or present problems of difficult behaviour. In the case of letters in house 1 the staff read them before they are sent or received by the girls.
- 5.7 In general terms the environment and the daily life in St Joseph's is child centred. The staff are always available, supportive and involved in the lives of the girls. Some of the issues, such as the interception of telephone calls and letters have caused the Inspectors to reflect on the current practices in children's homes and inevitably to draw comparisons. The Inspectors are all too aware of the difficulties that many of the girls have faced before their admission to St Joseph's. The school has a duty to protect the vulnerable, abused girls in their care, they must be vigilant against those who would write or telephone and who might cause even more hurt or disruption to the young lives. To this end the Inspectors recognise the need for policies that are peculiar to dealing with this group of highly disordered and damaged adolescents. They accept the judgement of a group of very experienced staff and would be reluctant to recommend changes that possibly might lead to the creation of even more problems for girls or staff. The practice of censure in letters and telephone calls, even in a limited fashion, is an emotive subject and one that senior staff must exercise continuing oversight of to ensure that the rights of the individual to privacy are not infringed.
- 5.8 A feature of the daily life in St Joseph's is the degree of supervision that is exercised by staff. Supervision is not punitive or authoritarian but it is clear that staff usually know where the girls are, either in the units or on the way to and from school. Supervision is essential in

Got news

by all

he told anything afterwards. I told her that I would discuss it with [REDACTED] tomorrow. I talked an awful lot about home and past life there. Got a phone call this evening. Went off to bed early - v. fed up. Took a len sip.

= village,

TV. and



el.

pfaktor
isil. Odd
lee laet

el 0 and
led

a long
strike if
and if
he would

Detunda 21K

SJM 1 [redacted] Look [redacted] HIA 376 [redacted] SJM 12 [redacted] and
SJM 8 [redacted] into the Office this afternoon and sorted
out the conflict that was going on between
them. SJM 12 [redacted] said that as far as she was
concerned there was no conflict! It appears that
there is some jealousy over a boyfriend. [redacted] HIA 376
said that she felt better afterwards.

Sunday 27^{π}

Good energy for. Spent the day knitting
6 waterp n/v

Monday 28th

Good form - down to school

Tuesday 29th

SJM 1 [redacted] Told [redacted] HIA 376 [redacted] that she probably would not be present at her review because there was going to be a lot of different people present there. Was v. concerned about [redacted] not setting up. [redacted] SJM 17 [redacted]

Wednesday 30th

Deemed in good form. Done to school.

Thursday 1st Dec

in good form. Down to school
Sent the evening knittin.

Hostel

9.10 Whilst the main purpose of the hostel is to provide opportunities for independence training it serves a number of other purposes. It provides:-

- a stepping stone from the supportive life in a long term unit in the school and for those girls heading for independent accommodation in the community;
- a means of reducing the dependence which can develop in a long-term unit;
- a mother and child facility;
- accommodation for planned returns to St Joseph's for overnight stay;
- a "crash-pad" to accommodate emergency returns.

9.11 The hostel has a flexible regime which is suited to preparing girls for accepting self responsibility. Warm and caring relationships with staff are much in evidence. As the hostel is only used when there is a specific need for it, can fluctuate from full to empty in a short space of time.

The Intensive Care Unit

9.12 Policy governing the use of the Intensive Care Unit is unambiguous, clearly understood and implemented. The policy is aimed at ensuring that the use made of the unit is both limited and controlled. The evidence that the policy is applied and works can be seen in the recorded infrequent incidence of its use. A close scrutiny of the records show that the transfer of girls from House units to the Intensive Care Unit is infrequent and this may be an indication of a staff tolerance and their ability to defuse difficult behaviour on a daily basis. Of those infrequent occasions when the intensive care unit is used security relies on the intensity of staff contact as much as, if not more, than, physical securing of the premises.

9.13 The Intensive Care Register is held centrally by the Director. Since the unit became operational in October 1990 there have been 31 admissions. Of these 26 were of children who returned to the school late at night and were unsettled or were under the influence of drink or drugs and had to be kept separate from their house group until the next morning. On only 5 occasions had children to be removed from their units because of disruptive behaviour. Of the 31 admissions 14 placements were attributable to 6 young people.

7. MISCELLANEOUS MATTERS

USE OF SECURE ACCOMMODATION

- 7.1 The use of secure accommodation is unfortunately not covered by the current Training School Rules or any other legislation in spite of its proliferation in recent years. As mentioned above St Joseph's has a small intensive care unit which is intended to meet the needs of emotionally disturbed girls for only quite short periods. The unit is self contained with three bedrooms, living room, kitchen, bathroom, etc. It has no staff of its own and if a young person has to be admitted it is the responsibility of the staff of the unit involved to look after her while she remains in it.
- 7.2 It is normally used for short periods with the authority of the senior member of staff on duty in the following circumstances;
- i. admission of a new child after 11 pm when the admission might unduly disturb the young people in House 1;
 - ii. the readmission of an existing resident who returns to the school late at night under the influence of solvents, alcohol, etc.

In these circumstances the girl is transferred to her own unit first thing the next morning.

- 7.3 Every time the unit is used, even though the girl may not be locked in, full reports are prepared giving details of the situation, who was involved and the decisions that were taken. These reports were made available to the Inspector. This material is also collated to give a picture of the use of the unit of a year. In 1993 there were 29 admissions of whom 14 simply slept in the unit without it being locked. Only 5 of the admissions were for 24 hours or more. Two of the five were for one day, one for 2 days, one for 3 days and one for a week. The latter was at the request of the court and social services. Since then use of the unit has declined and there have only been 8 admissions in 1994. There had been none between 15 June and the time of the inspection.

ABSCONDING

- 7.4 The Director told the Inspector that she views absconding as falling into several different categories. Firstly there are girls who walk out of the gates on impulse without permission and come back without on their own volition after a short time. The second group are similar but may need to be followed by a member of staff who talks to them until they also decide to return voluntarily. She felt that both these mild forms of absconding are usually a healthy response to stress. More seriously the third group may need to be followed, persuaded to return and then require considerable effort to resettle

PRIVATE

St Joseph's Training School, Middletown (22/08/1994 – 03/11/1994)

21. Children who had committed criminal offences were sent to Middletown so I do not understand why I was sent there. Everybody smoked and used the cigarettes as a bargaining tool.
22. I ran away from Middletown quite frequently. On one occasion SR247 caught me and slapped me across the face. If someone ran away the other residents were given a treat, like an extra cigarette, when the run-away was caught. After I ran away a few times I was placed in the secure unit in Middletown. I only got to see one staff member for one hour a day. The reminder of the time I was locked in my bedroom. I was just fourteen.
23. One of the times I ran away from Middletown I ended up at Daisy Hill Hospital. I was attracted by the lights as I knew I would be safe. I was hungry, tired and cold so I broke into a car looking for money. There was a key in the car so I started the car. I did not know how to drive and ended up crashing the car into a bollard. I was charged with seven separate offences as a result of this incident.
24. During my time in Middletown I was aware of the rumours that SR240 slapped other residents.
25. After I left Middletown on 3rd November 1994 I spent nearly a month in Craigavon Area hospital Adult Psychiatric Unit and then three weeks in a secure unit in St Luke's Hospital, Armagh before I was admitted to Rathgael.

Rathgael Training School, Bangor (22/12/1994 – 20/08/1997)

26. I was initially placed in Rathgael under a Fit Person Order and then a Training School Order was made on 17th February 1995. When I was in Rathgael I was moved around several different houses.
27. Some of the staff in Rathgael were kind and others used to antagonise children to the point that the children required to be physically restrained. There was a

1 A. Yes.

2 Q. Your breakfast is given there. You got soup, sandwiches
3 and yogurt. Now I am not going to go through, because
4 there are entries which show you being distressed and
5 depressed in the special unit, HIA198, and I know that
6 caused you distress when I was looking at those. I am
7 just going to tell the Panel Members that they can see
8 those from the next page on right through to 24698.

9 SR 234 has in her statement said that -- she
10 sets out the times that you were put into the ICU --

11 A. Uh-huh.

12 Q. -- and says essentially that there was no other way that
13 Middletown had to keep you safe.

14 A. Uh-huh.

15 Q. That's why you were placed there. I was asking you when
16 we were talking earlier, HIA198, whether you accept that
17 you were being put in the ICU for your own good.

18 A. I do accept, but there must have been a better way. You
19 know, there was -- there must have been better help for
20 me, and there was no help. It was just put in a room,
21 locked up and told to "Keep her safe", you know. That's
22 basically what it was.

23 Q. Well, going back to your statement, at paragraph 23 you
24 talk about one of the times you ran away and how you
25 ended up in trouble and you were charged with offences

1 A. Yes.

2 Q. Was it some form of sedative type of medication?

3 A. It would have -- it would have sedated me, yes. It
4 would have, like, calmed me down and made me sleepy and
5 dozy for bedtime.

6 Q. I see. Thank you very much.

7 MS DOHERTY: Thanks very much, HIA198. Can I just ask: you
8 talked about a living room, being out for an hour in the
9 living room.

10 A. Uh-huh.

11 Q. Was the living room part of the special unit or was that
12 your living room back in House 1?

13 A. No. The living room would have been part of the special
14 unit, so it would have been. I was -- I was in this
15 room. I had to walk a wee short -- just two seconds
16 down the hall and then into the right-hand side and
17 there would have been a living room with a TV and
18 a sofa.

19 Q. So you would be allowed in there for an hour. When you
20 were eating your lunch and your breakfast, did you eat
21 that in the bedroom or in the living room?

22 A. No, in the bedroom on the floor.

23 Q. In the bedroom on the floor you would eat the thing.

24 Can I just ask: I mean, I know you were told off for
25 your language and whatever, but did anybody sit down and

1 used to come in. She would have came around at
2 night-time now, so she would have. She had this thing
3 about putting lavender on your pillow to make you sleep.

4 Q. I see.

5 A. It never worked.

6 Q. If you were awake, would she ask you how you were, how
7 you were feeling or talk to you for any length of time?
8 What happened?

9 A. Not from what I can remember. It was just -- she was
10 just more like, "You are all right, you know. It is
11 bedtime now and it is time to go to sleep". I was there
12 in this room with, you know, head buzzing and ...

13 Q. There were references in the page or so that we saw of
14 your daily record in the intensive care unit --

15 A. Yes.

16 Q. -- of your being given some form of medication in syrup
17 form.

18 A. Yes. That was Mellaril. Mellaril had been prescribed
19 by . That was the medication that was
20 stopped by the trainee social worker in Kinahalla.
21 That's what led to the ...

22 Q. That had been reestablished in your routine?

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. Now we know from the documents that is
25 a consultant psychiatrist in Craigavon Hospital.

1 throughout my files. If I was hurt somewhere, I didn't
2 want to go back there. They told me I was going back to
3 Middletown. I refused point blank to go. They
4 transferred me to St. Luke's Psychiatric Unit, which was
5 where severely mentally ill people were.

6 Q. In terms of talking to people who were strangers and so
7 on, did your social worker keep visiting you at
8 Middletown?

9 A. Once or twice, but not -- you know, like, the first
10 time, no, there was no -- apart from me being put into
11 Middletown in May 1992 to June '92, I didn't really see
12 **SJM 72** , and then from the second time there might
13 have been about maybe two to three visits, but that was
14 it.

15 Q. Okay.

16 A. There was none while I was in the Psychiatric Unit or
17 anything. I was just put in there, put with ill people
18 and basically left to get on with it again.

19 Q. I know you ran away a number of times, but typically if
20 you can -- if they brought you back, did they just put
21 you in the secure unit?

22 A. Yes.

23 Q. What about talking about what had happened?

24 A. No, no, never talked why did -- they never asked you why
25 you ran away. They never asked you what was upsetting

1 you, what could have triggered it off. There was none
2 of that. It was just secure unit, back down to House 1.

3 Q. Thank you very much.

4 CHAIRMAN: Well, HIA198, thank you very much for coming back
5 to speak to us again. I am sorry we had to ask you to
6 come back a second time, but it is very difficult for us
7 to cope with --

8 A. Yes.

9 Q. -- a series of different places during the same module,
10 but I think I can tell you with some confidence that we
11 won't be requiring you to come back again.

12 A. Thank you.

13 Q. Thank you for coming to see us here.

14 A. Thank you.

15 MS SMITH: Chairman, there is another piece of evidence that
16 I want to produce to the Inquiry this morning, but if we
17 can take a short break, then I can get those papers.

18 CHAIRMAN: Yes. Very well. If you would like to go,
19 HIA198, you are welcome to go now.

20 A. Thank you.

21 (Witness withdrew)

22 (11.07 pm)

23 (Short break)

24 (11.20 pm)

25

Ongoing Work

- Addressing guilt/self blame about previous abuse.
- Examining factors leading up to incidents of self- injury (diary and self-monitoring exercises).
- Looking at concerns about sex/sexuality.

Current Events

HIA 198 has repeatedly absconded and reports taking a series of overdoses (Melleril, painkillers). It is my opinion that she is currently posing an unacceptably high level of risk to herself. Although I am unsure whether she genuinely wishes to kill herself, there is always a chance of an inadvertently fatal overdose. The cumulative effects of her numerous overdoses over the past 2 months is also a cause for concern.

On HIA 198 return from absconding it would be my opinion that she should be placed in a secure/close supervision setting for a period of up to 4/5 weeks in an effort to break her present cycle of absconding and self-injury and allow her ongoing management/treatment to be addressed.

Psychologist, Adolescent Psychology & Research Unit

PRIVATE

was always cheeky and ignorant in court. I would swear at the judge and ask to be sent back to the training school because at least it was all girls there. Harberton House kept asking if I was ready to tell the truth and I'd just say 'are you?' Eventually, the judge, Mr Perry in Derry court told St. Joseph's to keep me for two years. I was happy out because there were no male members of staff and no boys in St. Joseph's so at least nothing would happen to me there. However, we were locked up and forced to clean from morning until night in St. Joseph's. I was happy in St. Joseph's.

28. We walked to the main building for school at St. Joseph's. SJM40 was the principal and I had an art teacher called SJM41. When you were ready to leave St. Joseph's they moved you to a bungalow to give you independence and prepare you for life outside. I left St. Joseph's in 1994 when I was fifteen. I just walked out one day. I had been allowed out to my sister HIA 126 house on the weekends and then the IRA shot bullets at House 3 so I decided to leave. After I left, the nuns tried to lure me back twice, promising me I would get £50 if I came back up and signed a form. I refused point blank and remained with my sister. The police came looking for me once or twice but I just opened the door and said HIA 233 not here'.

Life after care

29. I got pregnant soon after I left St. Joseph's at sixteen. I got my own flat in [REDACTED]. The aftercare team from social services were based at Fort James and they called to see me when I was pregnant. They decided that my child needed a social worker based on the way my mother had raised my siblings and I. I asked if that applied to any child who had been in the homes. I vowed that I wouldn't let the social workers take my children from me. I challenged them in court and they backed down so there has never been any social worker involved with my children. To this day I have a fear of social workers. I don't trust anybody from that system. I never have and I never will.
30. I am married now with six children, two girls and four boys. The eldest is seventeen and the youngest is seven. Three of my children have autism and

HIA 233

PRIVATE

10

1 **A.** I was spoke to by a woman in the office along with the
2 other person named in that and her that was over us in
3 the office, in that home, but never in the station. So,
4 you see, I believe that's why some of these things are
5 documented when -- I beg to differ. I was never -- to
6 my knowledge remember being for that one incident ever
7 in a station.

8 **Q.** Well, in any event you did actually go then to
9 Middletown -- isn't that correct --

10 **A.** **Yes.**

11 **Q.** -- to St. Joseph's Middletown. You describe your time
12 there in paragraphs 23 through to 28.

13 **A.** **Yes.**

14 **Q.** Essentially there are some things that you say there
15 where you were called names by certain nuns, and you
16 were given cigarettes in paragraph 25, and you also
17 describe being trailed by the hair in paragraph 26, but
18 you say that you had no complaints about Middletown --

19 **A.** **No.**

20 **Q.** -- and you actually liked it there.

21 **A.** **Loved it.**

22 **Q.** You then walked out of it. Is that correct?

23 **A.** **Aye.**

24 **Q.** Why was that?

25 **A.** I just -- they let me out to my sister one time for

PRIVATE

St. Joseph's Training School, Middletown, Co. Armagh (1992-1994)

23. I was thirteen years old when I was moved to St. Joseph's training school. It was out in the hills in Armagh and we thought it was great craic. SR234 and SR235 were the two nuns in St. Joseph's and they were both very nice. SR236 was a lovely woman. She would sing to try to calm you down but she left when I was there. St. Joseph's was split into four houses. I was in House 2. The staff in my house were SJM1 SJM5 and SJM2 and they were nice. We slept in dormitories with a curtain for a door.
24. We had to make our own meals but I was taken out of the kitchen because I was always putting fairy liquid in the food. I was a handful growing up but they made me like that. SR235 used to call me a 'delinquent'. Others called me an 'illegitimate bastard'. I was a nice child until nobody would believe me about the abuse. After that, I was always angry and my anger was directed towards whoever was the boss. The way I saw it every member of staff was to blame.
25. In St Joseph's the government provided five cigarettes to each girl a day. I know this because the nuns told me. We were given a full cigarette at 9am, 1pm, 4pm, 6pm and 9pm and we shared a cigarette at 11am. I started smoking in there when I was thirteen just to get something else from the system. The cigarettes were regal filters and I still smoke the same cigarettes today.
26. There were four cells which we called 'the lock up'. In the cell there was a metal bed. The cells had red doors and bars on the windows. They would put you there if you did anything wrong. I was in it many times for bad behaviour. I was put in it for two or three days at a time. I was given my usual cigarettes and water but no food at all. That was the punishment. You would be trailed there by the hair.
27. After an initial four weeks in St. Joseph's you went back to court and you'd be given another interim order for five weeks. I think fifteen weeks was the maximum short stay. St Joseph's gave us £50 after every court appearance. I

1 Q. You did say to me that there was only one other girl who
2 had been a resident who actually came back to work in --

3 A. That I remember, yes.

4 Q. That you remember as a member of staff.

5 A. Yes.

6 Q. In fact, her name features in the police material that
7 we were looking at also. Isn't that right?

8 A. That's right.

9 Q. That was SJM60 .

10 A. That's right.

11 Q. You also made the point to me that if a child asked for
12 a particular member of staff to look after her in the
13 ICU, that that was --

14 A. We would do our best to facilitate her, and if that
15 person couldn't be released at a certain time, I note
16 that we've said -- for example, HIA198 was told that
17 SJM4 could see her at such a time and she said that was
18 okay.

19 Q. So you would make arrangements certainly to try to
20 facilitate --

21 A. That's right.

22 Q. -- the requests of the child.

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. Now, Sister, I am not going to go through HIA198's ICU
25 records, but I let you have a look at them this morning

ST JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL
MIDDLETOWN CO ARMAGH BT60 4HZ

TELEPHONE: 0861 568525 FAX NO: 0861 568897

INTENSIVE CARE UNIT

31 January 1995

re [REDACTED] HIA 233

[REDACTED] HIA 233 was causing serious hassle in Fort James Children's Home. Finally Social Services took a Place of Safety and brought her at 11.30PM. She had been in a very aggressive mood with social workers but was co-operative once she was admitted to the Intensive Care Unit.

She moved to the Hostel on Wednesday 1 February at 12 noon.

[REDACTED] SR 234

[REDACTED] SR 234

Deputy Director

ST JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL
MIDDLETOWN CO ARMAGH BT60 4HZ

TELEPHONE: 0861 568525 FAX NO: 0861 568897

15 November 1993

HIA 233

- REASONS FOR ADMISSION TO INTENSIVE CARE UNIT

HIA 233 is a 14 year old girl, seriously disruptive and disturbed. She is with us since November 1992, and is slowly learning limits. She had terrorised the Children's Home whilst there, breaking windows, assaulting staff and girls.

There has been a serious deterioration in her behaviour since August 1993. She was given an outdoor pursuits holiday and was sent back for sniffing and assaulting a 12 year old girl.

Since then it has been a continuous battle. She has disrupted classes consistently, being extremely defiant, threatening and aggressive to teachers and staff. She bullied some of the younger children and constantly goaded some of the most vulnerable girls.

She is a very damaged girl who refuses to attend the Psychologist. However, despite intensive one to one work, counselling, special programmes etc, there was no improvement in her behaviour. She persistently pushed the limits, threw tantrums and verbally attacked every one in sight. House 2 staff, SR 235 teachers, addressed the problems with HIA 233 to little avail.

Finally it was agreed that if HIA 233 continued to push the limits to unacceptable lengths especially in her House Unit she would be placed in the Intensive Care Unit with the hope that without the presence of a group she and staff may be able to address the problems and set acceptable limits. It was explained to HIA 233 that she would only return to the group when she was prepared to live within the Unit.

On Sunday 14th, despite several warnings, HIA 233 continued disrupting the group and had to be placed in the Intensive Care Unit at 4.00 pm. It appeared almost as a relief at that point.

HIA 233 slept a lot on Monday 15th and was uncommunicative. However, towards evening she was more open, but not at the point for making a contract. She seemed to have calmed and she talked a little to staff but was not ready mentally or emotionally for reintegration. At some level she was glad that there are limits being placed on her behaviour - "you don't care if you let me go mad" was her statement to one staff member.

She stayed in the Intensive Care Unit on Monday, made a new contract on Tuesday and returned to her Unit after school. The timing was at her request.

Such as a ring leader for
The rest of the girls. ☐

HIA 233

Now that you have ticked

which event boxes that you

think apply could you please

tell me by writing out 10 single

words what sort of person you

personally see yourself as.

1. ~~Can't be helpful~~ Helpful.

2. Quick-tempered.

3. Loud.

4. Can be a Bully.

5. Cheeky ~~were~~ Bitch.

6. Can't be told off.

7. Can't talk.

8. Love ~~wages~~ kids.

9. Hate talking.

10. Hate the lock-up.

Would you please inform
rest of the girls do not
know that you are in the
same unit and if so why?

Yes, because it's nothing to be
proud of.

Tell me briefly why were you
sent to the same unit last
night? For being abusive to 3 staff.

you ask of questions is there
anything else important that
you have on your mind that
you would like to write or
talk about. Use the space below.

Yes - I write the cont.

and am sorry for what I have

done -

HIA 233

16/3/94.

15.3.94. 8pm.

TIME		COMMENTS	MEALS	MEDICATION IF ANY
	HIA 233	was removed from #2.		
SIGNED				
3/94 9:30am	HIA 233	had a bath.		
10am	HIA 233	had cereal + tea		
12 noon	HIA 233	had tea + biscuits		
1:00 clock	HIA 233	did not eat dinner brought up from school.		
SIGNED				
6/3/94 3:00		had chips + burger + juice		
6:00		cup of tea + biscuits		
7:30		bowl of fruit		
SIGNED				

them to the Intensive Care Unit or staff who worked in their House so that they were familiar with the individual who was staying with them. If the key worker was not available or staff allocated to their House then myself or another member of the Senior Team would have stayed with the girls in the Unit. This is confirmed by reference to the Intensive Care Unit Diary for November 1993. The records confirm that I was with HIA 233 overnight and that she was checked regularly by other staff who remained with her.

33. The diaries confirm HIA 233 was also in the Intensive Care Unit or there were discussions about the unit on the following dates:-

- a) On the 15th March 1994 the House diary confirms HIA 233 was in intensive care after an argument with another girl and after she went into the store for a cigarette. HIA 233 remained in the Unit until 17th November 1994.
- b) On 28th February 1994 the diaries describe an altercation between HIA 233 and another individual. Sending HIA 233 to the secure unit was discussed but the situation was resolved by talking and separating HIA 233 from the situation.
- c) On 9th June 1994, a diary entry confirms that HIA 233 asked to go to the secure unit when staff were concerned that she had been sniffing substances.

34. HIA 233 also stayed in the Intensive Care Unit on 31st January 1995. This was after HIA 233 had been discharged from St Joseph's. At the time HIA 233 was residing in Fort James' Children's Home but Social Services applied for another Removal to a Place of Safety Order. HIA 233 arrived at 11.30pm and returned to the hostel the next day at 12 noon. I attach a note from SR 234 ('BD10')

35. A girl in the Intensive Care Unit was not deprived of food. She had the usual three meals per day and she was not left on her own.

36. In terms of going to the Intensive Care Unit, this was usually agreed by negotiation. Most of the girls eventually agreed that their behaviour was out of control and that they would have to go to the Intensive Care Unit. No girl was *trailed* into the Intensive Care Unit by the hair. I certainly never witnessed this and I have to say with all my experience of working with staff at St Joseph's, I cannot believe this would have happened. On occasion girls who had run away were brought back to St Joseph's by the police and may have been taken by police officers to the Intensive Care Unit.

37. In relation to paragraph 27 of HIA 233 statement (SJM -026 & 027), it is correct that most girls were initially admitted to St Joseph's after a short term Interim Order was

visited -

308. June

● New Again (160-205) THURSDAY 9

Talk to

she will tell you or on details

Thanks

* Phone call from [redacted] father's prison office telling us we were in the [redacted] court case of 1960. I said we were - Ross a report will be on page 1 next

placed Diana

promoted her sisters in Nazareth, house

I phoned Nhrzfeld. spoke with [redacted] - She hadn't much to say apart from the fact that [redacted] was outside a Hostel (formerly ill) with another girl early in the evening.

Hester does not cater for Schedule one offenders only
I also phoned her social worker but [REDACTED] was not
available today or tomorrow.

WFOE HIA 233 received a call from [redacted] [redacted] HIA 126 at 8:30 [redacted] but HIA 233 wasn't available for earlier call - HIA [redacted] HIA 233 [redacted] around five o'clock

Time [redacted] rang [redacted] [redacted] taken out for committed clothing
[redacted] v. high from 11pm 12:15am. Agreed to sleep in
serve visit tonight
[redacted] HIA 233 - given paracetamol at 9:30am.
[redacted] given - @ 12am for sore ear.

JULY					AUG					SEPT					OCT					NOV					DEC										
M	1	4	11	18	25	M	1	8	15	22	29	M	5	12	19	26	M	2	9	16	23	30	M	1	8	15	22	29	M	1	8	15	22	29	
T	5	12	19	26		T	5	12	19	26		T	6	13	20	27	T	3	10	17	24	31	T	1	8	15	22	29	T	5	12	19	26		
W	6	13	20	27		W	6	13	20	27		W	7	14	21	28	W	4	11	18	25		W	2	9	16	23	30	W	6	13	20	27		
T	7	14	21	28		T	4	11	18	25		T	1	8	15	22	29	T	5	12	19	26		T	3	10	17	24	31	T	7	14	21	28	
F	1	8	15	22	29	F	5	12	19	26		F	2	9	16	23	30	F	6	13	20	27		F	4	11	18	25		F	1	8	15	22	29
S	2	9	16	23	30	S	6	13	20	27		S	3	10	17	24		S	1	8	15	22	29	S	5	12	19	26		S	2	9	16	23	30
S	3	10	17	24	31	S	7	14	21	28		S	4	11	18	25		S	3	9	16	23	30	S	3	9	16	23	30	S	6	13	20	27	

808.
March

BK 11

Dr's I SJM 4

TV

Hostel

TUESDAY 15

Margot incident — HIA 233 removed from H2 to Sp. Unit at 8:20 p.m. approx. Earlier in the day — 11:15 A.M. she had verbally abused [redacted] and forced an entry to the store to get a cig. When [redacted] refused her permission to go home to-morrow HIA 233 again became verbally abusive. SJM 5 helped me to remove her physically — it was a case of dragging/pushing to the pool steps — she agreed to walk with SJM5 up the grass. SJM 5 stayed in Sp unit suggested by [redacted] to 10 p.m. HIA 233 screamed, kicked etc. for over an hour.

I. There were six swimmers from H2 I left during [redacted] to supervise them when [redacted] called me to H2.

III [redacted] & [redacted] came for a swim [redacted] was being abusive to [redacted] in H3.

Visited HIA 233 10:30 p.m. b.c. She had questioned considerably.

1994

JULY					AUG					SEPT					OCT					NOV					DEC				
M	T	W	T	F	M	T	W	T	F	M	T	W	T	F	M	T	W	T	F	M	T	W	T	F					
4	5	6	7	8	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10					
11	12	13	14	15	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19					
18	19	20	21	22	15	16	17	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	17	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	25	26					
25	26	27	28	29	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31							

sending them to their room. I never witnessed the Sisters slapping, beating or hurting any of the girls.

11. I was put in the lock up once because of fighting with the other girls. The door was not locked. There was a member of staff with me at all times. It was a good place to calm down. I remember being given magazines and puzzles when I was there.

12. I ran away a few times. I had no need to do it as I got out often but the other girls put me up to it. It was just to prove a point. That was the only reason why I did it. Any time I ran away the Police brought me back. I would have gone back into the house and SR 240 would have given off to me and told me not to do it again. I might have been denied a cigarette or lost points but that was it.

13. We were allowed to smoke in St. Joseph's. We were given five cigarettes per day split up between the 12 hours. We got our last cigarette at 9pm at night. Unless our parents gave permission for us to smoke, we weren't allowed to. I already smoked before I went to St. Joseph's and my parents give permission for me to continue to smoke. We were not encouraged to smoke by the Sisters. Once our cigarettes ran out that was it. We bought cigarettes with our pocket money. We were not given any more once they ran out. All the other girls smoked.

14. I never had any problems with the Sisters. The only issues I had were with the other girls. When I had a problem I went to my key worker [REDACTED]

15. I remember SJM 11 SR 234 SJM 2 and [REDACTED] They were all very good to me. They had a lot to listen to. It was very stressful for them but they never hurt anyone. I loved my time at St. Joseph's. I think it made me a better person. I was expelled from secondary school and couldn't read or write. I went to school at St. Joseph's and learned to read and write. There were small classes so it was easier to learn. It was an enjoyable experience.

Telephone :
CANNON 525/6

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL
MIDDLETOWN
Co. ARMAGH

17 September 1987

Mr Norman Douglas
Training Schools Branch
Northern Ireland Office
BELFAST

Dear Mr Douglas

RE CAPITAL EXPENDITURE - ASSESSMENT CENTRE

Thank you for your letter of the 24 August.

The Board has examined the needs of the school in the light of present usage, the pending legislation changes and the new problems emerging as a result of the increase in violence in Residential Establishments and the ever increasing number of seriously disturbed, suicidal adolescents who are coming into our care. It is the Board's opinion that it would be impossible at this moment to gauge the likely effects of new legislation on the numbers coming to St. Joseph's. It is their view that it would take some years after the enactment of legislation before any reliable trends could be monitored and or established.

The initial proposal to build a new Assessment Unit was based on the following identified needs:-

- (i) The usage of the present Unit, which over the past few years has been at a daily average occupancy of ten girls to eight beds.
- (ii) the design of the Unit which is ideally suited for six/seven girls makes no provision for such essential facilities as rooms for Case Conferences, family meetings, personal interviews for the girls with unit staff, social workers, psychologists. Due to lack of space these often take place in areas which are totally unsuited for confidential discussions.
- (iii) The other area of major need is the provision of a Small Unit which we call, loosely an Intensive Care Unit. This unit would be used as a temporary respite for a girl or girls who may be emotionally disturbed, suicidal or need safe space in a confidential setting to express grief, anger etc. We have a group of severely disturbed adolescents who indulge in self injury and self mutilation and who at times need a safe secure environment for short periods. We have girls who are the victims of sexual abuse and who require at times a waking staff member during the night to help them cope with their fears and nightmares.

There is, as you are aware, a growth in the incidents of Violence in all Residential establishments, and we have evidence of this in Middletown also.

STATEMENT OF WITNESS

SJM-4034

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 58

Name

Rank

AGE OF WITNESS (If over 21 enter "over 21"):

OVER 21

To be
completed
when the
statement
has been
written.

I declare that this statement consisting of 7 pages, each signed by me is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in evidence at a preliminary enquiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable to prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it anything which I know to be false or do not believe to be true.

Dated this 7TH

day of SEPTEMBER 1998

[REDACTED] SJM 58

SIGNATURE OF MEMBER by whom
statement was recorded or received

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

In November 1975 I was sent to St Joseph's Training School, Middletown because I wasn't getting on well at home. I had become rebellious and my parents couldn't control me. Nothing happened until January 1976 and I got my Training School Order which made St Joseph's my legal guardian. I knew [REDACTED] SJM 4 when I first arrived. She befriended me made my life a bit easier although I was afraid of her. She was the House Parent in charge of the house. I'd seen her grab other girls by the hair and hit them she was a big woman and although she was nice to me I knew not to mess with her. One night I felt a bit sick I went down to the duty room. [REDACTED] SJM 4 was there in bed. She had been sleeping. I told her I felt sick. I was sitting at the bottom of the bed it was freezing. I was in my nightie. It was around midnight. She didn't turn the light on. She said who's that I said, [REDACTED] SJM 58 I feel sick." She said, "What's wrong with you?" I said, "I feel a bit sick." She pulled back the bedclothes. She said, "Get in." I said, "I'm freezing." She was lying on her side the size of her she was so big. I was slight so there was room for me but it was a tight squeeze. She was wearing a pink nylon nightdress. She asked me what made me sick. I didn't know. She said, "You'll be alright." Then she put her hand

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

[REDACTED] SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 2

down underneath my knickers. I was lying on my back she was on her side. I was nearly half out of the bed. There was not much room. She started to fondle me she said, "I'll help you to get to sleep." She felt my vagina with her fingers. She put one of her fingers into my vagina she moved her finger up and down she then removed her hand from down below and moved up to my breasts. She then felt both my breasts. I was fourteen my breasts were small but developed. I near fainted I said to myself fuck what's going on I thought it was strange for a woman but then I thought well this must be what goes on because the place was full of women. She told me she loved me. Not to tell anybody she kissed me full on the lips. She put her tongue into my mouth. I said, "I'm going back to bed." As I got up to leave she said, "Don't tell anybody." I felt she had aroused emotions that I did not understand. I had never had sex didn't know what it was like. I left her went back to my room which was on the same level. I hardly slept a wink. I was sort of happy she told me that she loved me. No-one ever told me that before my parents were strict and never showed affection. The next morning [REDACTED] SJM 4 came into my alcove where my bed was she said, "Are you getting up?" I got up and went for breakfast. That was the first day she got me to sit beside her that continued until May 76 when I went to House 4. She obviously made it clear to other members of staff that she was fond of me. I was known as [REDACTED] SJM 4 child. There had been ones before me called [REDACTED] SJM 4 children. I didn't think it strange. She would get me into the duty room to give me a cigarette and for me to make her bed for her to sleep in. I was already in my nightdress she always waited until I had a shower and ready to go to bed at 10 00pm. She would then get me to go to the duty room. She had it organised. I never at that time realised she had it all set up. She was affectionate to me. I felt wanted it gave me the name of being invincible no-one would fight with

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

[REDACTED] SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 3

me because they'd have to answer to [REDACTED] SJM 4 At the time I didn't realise I do now. [REDACTED] SJM 4 would come into the duty room and say, "Have you the bed made?" I was sitting waiting on the cigarette. She would turn the key to lock the door. She would make sure the other girls were in bed. None of the girls would get out of bed because they were afraid of her. The wee lamp would be on. I'd sit and smoke the cigarette. I'd chat generally to her I'd finish the cigarette and move to go she'd say, "Don't be going yet." I forgot to say that she would initially come into the room and tell me to leave, come back in ten minutes for my cigarette and during that time she would get undressed and into her nightie she would be in bed when I arrived back. Once I'd smoked the cigarette and she had told me to stay she'd tell me to get into bed which I did. I'd get under the bedcovers. She turned the lamp out there'd be complete darkness not pitch dark you could see slightly from the outside street lights. She would again put her hands down underneath my knickers and feel around my vagina she put her finger inside me and she would move it up and down. I would feel a wetness down there around my vagina. She'd kiss me on the lips and tell me she loved me. She never called me [REDACTED] SJM 58 just [REDACTED] SJM 58 I love you [REDACTED] SJM 58 It was on the second occasion I said, "This is not right." She said, "But I love you." she told me that if two people loved each other that's what they did. I accepted that and went to bed. On the third occasion the same ritual happened. I would make her bed she'd give me a cigarette I'd smoke it and get in beneath the bedclothes. She'd already be changed and in bed. Both of us always wore knickers. She didn't always feel my breasts but she always felt below. This time things changed she felt me below doing the same as she had on the previous two occasions. This time she stopped and lay on her back which automatically made me move over unto my side. She took my hand and put it on her vagina she wasn't wearing

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

[REDACTED] SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 4

any underwear. She started directing my hand and fingers showing me what to do she said it was lovely and that she loved me. She directed me with her hand to insert my fingers inside her. She was kissing me on the mouth. I don't know how I felt I was very confused. I didn't at first like doing it to her but as time went on and she bought me jewellery and cigarettes and records I didn't mind doing it. She would come when I did it to her. I can see so clearly now that she had done this all before. Everytime she was in the duty room at least once a week we would do it together. It got to the point that I did it to her without her directing me to do so. Shortly after my fifteenth birthday in February [REDACTED] she started to have oral sex with me. She had bought me a Claddagh ring for my birthday and told me it was a friendship ring. This was rammed down my throat this thing about friendship. We were in bed in the duty room lying underneath the covers I was lying on my back. She took my knickers completely off. She moved to the bottom of the bed she moved my legs apart with her hands and then started licking my vagina with her tongue. I said, "What are you doing?" She said, "You'll see." I had an organism. Once she had finished she told me to do the same on her. I thought it was disgusting. It only happened four more times after that I wouldn't do it to her or let her do it to me. I knew if she did it to me I'd have to do it to her. Sometimes she would become aggressive towards me I guess that was to keep me in toe. I became a bit withdrawn and not speak to her. She come and shout at me. She regularly ask me had I told anybody she ring me when she was off duty. I'd say no and she say good. She would give me cigarettes or something, a teddy bear once and tell me good girl. I moved to House 4 in May 1976. The staff had rooms in each corridor in each house. She had a room in House 1. I still had to go over and see her. She'd ring over for me to come over. There'd be sweets, cigarettes maybe a teddy bear,

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

[REDACTED] SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 5

perfume the lot. She would have grabbed me pulled me to her and kissed me full on the lips. She would have french kissed me. I was in my day-time clothes or in my school uniform. The same thing would happen. There was no particular day she called me over, no set days. The abuse continued at least once a week depending on what she was working. It stopped when I left in December 1977. In those two years I ran away three times because I was so confused. The Sisters (Nuns) thought that we got on really well. They didn't know the half of it. When I left she didn't want to know me I was no use to her. She got married after that. I didn't tell [REDACTED] SR 240 because at that time they could do what they wanted on us. She would have battered me and not believed me. On two occasions I visited her mother's house in a townland called [REDACTED] outside [REDACTED]. The first one was in 1977 I was in the hostel. She invited me to stay with her for the weekend we both slept in her bedroom. The house has been renovated including her bedroom. It was a white bungalow. They were rough and ready. Her bedroom when I visited it was light pink flowered wallpaper 2 single beds. There was a dressing table she had a photograph of me in my school uniform sitting on the dressing table. We were both in separate beds in her room. It was night she asked me to get into the bed beside me which I did. We both touched each other on our vaginas and put our fingers inside each other we both made each other come. The second time was the exact same I believe these two incidents happened on weekends between September 1977 and December 1977. It just seemed to be the thing to do. I bought her a silver ring as a present but she bought all the rest of the presents. She was always in the background I didn't mind, through the years for fifteen years I have had no contact with her until 1993 when I was admitted to St Luke's, Armagh for alcohol abuse. My Keyworker suggested I see some of the old teachers. I knew she was there I

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

[REDACTED] SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 6

wanted to see the nuns. I had it buried. [REDACTED] SJM 4 was the one that my Keyworker got in touch with. It was arranged for me to visit and stay the night at St Joseph's. I was enjoying myself until I went to bed. [REDACTED] SJM 4 came to my room which was in House 1 to speak to me she was in her nightie. I told her to fuck off which she did. I visited St Joseph's regularly up until December 1994. [REDACTED] SJM 4 was always checking to see if I told anyone. I told [REDACTED] SJM 4 I was leaving to go to London. [REDACTED] SJM 4 organised that. I didn't see her after that she phoned occasionally. I'd ring her up when I was stoned and called her all the names I could think of. She'd say that she felt guilty for years but all came to a head on Tuesday 1st September 1998. I rang her I told her I was going to tell the police. She said, "Uck Jesus [REDACTED] SJM 58" I said, "I can't go on with this any more I am in and out of psychiatric care my life's a misery through drink." She said, "I know I've been waiting for years," she said, "Would you not wait my mother's sick?" I said, "Fuck ye I'm sure I'm worried, what about, what about my life my life's destroyed." She rang back half an hour later she said, "Will I tell the children?" I said, "Do whatever you like." She said I don't have to tell [REDACTED] that's her husband, he already knows. I don't care if the nuns know I never told anyone because I did not want to hurt them but I've got to think about me now. It was out of loyalty to the nuns they were so good to me. The finest women I've ever met. I've never been able to keep a proper relationship with a male, I'm aggressive because I'm full of anger I suffer from depression. I'm on anti-depressants and mood stabilizers. I've been off the drink for around three weeks now. Finally I remember her taking me to buy me an ornament in Armagh because I was leaving. She bought me a blue china elephant on it was written 'I will always remember', I gave it back to her about two years ago telling her that I'd always remember I'll never forget. She always

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

[REDACTED] SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 6

wanted to see the nuns. I had it buried. SJM 4 was the one that my Keyworker got in touch with. It was arranged for me to visit and stay the night at St Joseph's. I was enjoying myself until I went to bed. SJM 4 came to my room which was in House 1 to speak to me she was in her nightie. I told her to fuck off which she did. I visited St Joseph's regularly up until December 1994. SJM 4 was always checking to see if I told anyone. I told SJM 4 I was leaving to go to London. SJM 4 organised that. I didn't see her after that she phoned occasionally. I'd ring her up when I was stoned and called her all the names I could think of. She'd say that she felt guilty for years but all came to a head on Tuesday 1st September 1998. I rang her I told her I was going to tell the police. She said, "Uck Jesus SJM 58" I said, "I can't go on with this any more I am in and out of psychiatric care my life's a misery through drink." She said, "I know I've been waiting for years," she said, "Would you not wait my mother's sick?" I said, "Fuck ye I'm sure I'm worried, what about, what about my life my life's destroyed." She rang back half an hour later she said, "Will I tell the children?" I said, "Do whatever you like." She said I don't have to tell [REDACTED] that's her husband, he already knows. I don't care if the nuns know I never told anyone because I did not want to hurt them but I've got to think about me now. It was out of loyalty to the nuns they were so good to me. The finest women I've ever met. I've never been able to keep a proper relationship with a male, I'm aggressive because I'm full of anger I suffer from depression. I'm on anti-depressants and mood stabilizers. I've been off the drink for around three weeks now. Finally I remember her taking me to buy me an ornament in Armagh because I was leaving. She bought me a blue china elephant on it was written 'I will always remember', I gave it back to her about two years ago telling her that I'd always remember I'll never forget. She always

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

SJM 58

STATEMENT OF: SJM 58

Continuation Page No: 7

had a hold on me and I never felt that I ever was rid of her. I was so vulnerable and she played on that even in later years when I was in the psychiatric hospital, she always kept me in check to make sure I didn't tell anyone. People would think she was awful good to me, that's the way she made it seem but in later years she was very demeaning to me, making me feel inferior. I have not been in touch with her since last Tuesday. In a way it's going to be difficult but I'm glad I've told the police. I've been in trouble with the police I've been convicted of public order offences, criminal damage and attempting to steal a car. The drink has made me worse if someone calls me a whore I go stone mad because it's so unfair. I've had to suffer for something that wasn't my fault.

SJM 58

Lucretia Con Rios

Certified a true copy of original

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

OUTLINE OF CASE*

(Give content facts in chronological order with clarity and brevity. Do not merely repeat witness statements. Where more than one person reported summarise the case against each

Whilst the aim should be to summarise the facts on one page, a continuation page may be used if it is necessary for the inclusion of all the salient facts.)

On Thursday 3 September 1998 [REDACTED] SJM 58 [REDACTED] SJM 58 contacted [REDACTED] CARE Unit asking to speak to CARE regarding allegations of sexual abuse which occurred at St Joseph's Training School, Middletown between January 1976 and December 1977.

On 7 September 1998 a statement of complaint was recorded from [REDACTED] SJM 58 by D/Constable CARTMILL regarding having been sexually assaulted by [REDACTED] SJM 4 on a number of occasions whilst she was at St Joseph's Training School.

The abuse included digital penetration by [REDACTED] SJM 4 on [REDACTED] SJM 58 digital sex and oral sex involving both females. [REDACTED] SJM 58 remembers herself being known as "[REDACTED] SJM 4's child" amongst staff and children.

[REDACTED] SJM 58 recalls on her arrival at St Joseph's Training School of a girl known as [REDACTED] SJM 109 who had absconded in order to marry a person known as [REDACTED]. She had done this in order to get away from [REDACTED] SJM 4. [REDACTED] SJM 109 was also known as [REDACTED] SJM 4's child. [REDACTED] SJM 58 did not speak to anyone about her abuse whilst at St Joseph's, neither over the years has she spoken to anyone about her abuse. She has spent time in Craigavon Psychiatric Unit but never revealed anything during that time.

She did speak to a "friend" (sponsor) in Alcoholics Anonymous but refused to give his name.

On 15 September 1998 [REDACTED] SJM 4 attended Banbridge RUC Station as a voluntary attender accompanied by her Solicitor, Mr NOEL PHOENIX. D/Constable G SPROULE was also present. PACE 10 was completed accordingly and the interview which commenced at 1445 hours and terminated 1529 hours was tape recorded. During interview [REDACTED] SJM 4 explained that [REDACTED] SJM 58 would have been known as [REDACTED] SJM 4's child, as were other children and that each house parent was known to have their favourites. She agreed that she had bought presents for [REDACTED] SJM 58 but denied that anything inappropriate had ever occurred. She had kept in contact with [REDACTED] SJM 58 over the years but not on a consistent nature as [REDACTED] SJM 58 had a heavy drink problem and would ring at anytime drunk. [REDACTED] SJM 58 did ring her regularly and recently told her that she was going to report the matter to police. [REDACTED] SJM 4 advised [REDACTED] SJM 11 St Joseph's of the content of the telephone conversation that had taken place, outlining that she had refused to give [REDACTED] SJM 58 any further money or support her emotionally to the extent she had.

On the same date a statement was recorded from [REDACTED], outlining [REDACTED] SJM 58's behaviour.

On 21 September 1998 a statement was recorded from [REDACTED] SJM 109 [REDACTED] SJM 109 was shocked to hear of the allegations and firmly denied anything ever happening to her. She stated that she had the utmost respect for [REDACTED] SJM 4 and still did. She had never heard of anything happening to any other girl.

On Sunday 25 October 1998 [REDACTED] was contacted by telephone and spoken to by D/Constable Cartmill regarding her knowledge of [REDACTED] SJM 4 [REDACTED] SJM 4 like [REDACTED] SJM 109 had the greatest respect for

I certify that all witness statements taken by police in connection with this investigation are included in this file.

To be signed by
investigating officer


NAME
G CARTMILL

D/CONST PW1264
RANK NO.

OUTLINE OF CASE*

(Give content facts in chronological order with clarity and brevity. Do not merely repeat witness statements. Where more than one person reported summarise the case against each

Whilst the aim should be to summarise the facts on one page, a continuation page may be used if it is necessary for the inclusion of all the salient facts.)

On Thursday 3 September 1998 SJM 58 contacted [REDACTED] CARE Unit asking to speak to CARE regarding allegations of sexual abuse which occurred at St Joseph's Training School, Middletown between January 1976 and December 1977.

On 7 September 1998 a statement of complaint was recorded from SJM 58 by D/Constable CARTMILL regarding having been sexually assaulted by SJM 4 on a number of occasions whilst she was at St Joseph's Training School.

The abuse included digital penetration by SJM 4 on SJM 58, digital sex and oral sex involving both females. SJM 58 remembers herself being known as "SJM 4's child" amongst staff and children.

SJM 58 recalls on her arrival at St Joseph's Training School of a girl known as SJM 109 who had absconded in order to marry a person known as [REDACTED]. She had done this in order to get away from SJM 4. SJM 109 was also known as SJM 4's child. SJM 58 did not speak to anyone about her abuse whilst at St Joseph's, neither over the years has she spoken to anyone about her abuse. She has spent time in Craigavon Psychiatric Unit but never revealed anything during that time.

She did speak to a "friend" (sponsor) in Alcoholics Anonymous but refused to give his name.

On 15 September 1998 SJM 4 attended Banbridge RUC Station as a voluntary attender accompanied by her Solicitor, Mr NOEL PHOENIX. D/Constable G SPROULE was also present. PACE 10 was completed accordingly and the interview which commenced at 1445 hours and terminated 1529 hours was tape recorded. During interview SJM 4 explained that SJM 58 would have been known as SJM 4's child, as were other children and that each house parent was known to have their favourites. She agreed that she had bought presents for SJM 58 but denied that anything inappropriate had ever occurred. She had kept in contact with SJM 58 over the years but not on a consistent nature as [REDACTED] had a heavy drink problem and would ring at anytime drunk. [REDACTED] did ring her regularly and recently told her that she was going to report the matter to police. SJM 4 advised SJM 11 St Joseph's of the content of the telephone conversation that had taken place, outlining that she had refused to give SJM 58 any further money or support her emotionally to the extent she had.

On the same date a statement was recorded from [REDACTED], outlining SJM 58's behaviour.

On 21 September 1998 a statement was recorded from SJM 109. SJM 109 was shocked to hear of the allegations and firmly denied anything ever happening to her. She stated that she had the utmost respect for SJM 4 and still did. She had never heard of anything happening to any other girl.

On Sunday 25 October 1998 [REDACTED] was contacted by telephone and spoken to by D/Constable Cartmill regarding her knowledge of SJM 4. [REDACTED] like SJM 109, had the greatest respect for

I certify that all witness statements taken by police in connection with this investigation are included in this file.

To be signed by
investigating officer


NAME
G CARTMILL

D/CONST PW1264
RANK NO.

SJM 4 and would still contact her from time to time. She was shocked to hear of the allegations regarding SJM 4 and firmly stated that she had never heard of any rumours regarding abuse of that nature involving SJM 4.

SJM 11 would say that she and others from St Joseph's have kept contact with SJM 58. Since she left in 1977 SJM 58 stayed (after her psychiatric stay in 1993) with them, living in a flat at St Joseph's. She was asked to leave as she became disruptive. SJM 11 has known SJM 58 personally since 1976 and in all that time SJM 58 has not even hinted at being sexually abused by anyone. It has been known for a long time that SJM 58 has suffered from severe drinking problems and has attended Craigavon Psychiatric Hospital for chronic depression and throughout the years, St Joseph's have given SJM 58 support through these times, as has SJM 4.

To date enquiries have proved negative. SJM 4 is currently suspended on full pay.

I certify that all witness statements taken by police in connection with this investigation are included in this file.

To be signed by
investigating officer


NAME
G CARTMILL

D/CONST PW1264
RANK NO.

NO PROSECUTION

SUBJECT: ALLEGED INDECENT ASSAULT ON SJM 58 BETWEEN
JANUARY 1976 AND DECEMBER 1977 AT ST JOSEPH'S
TRAINING SCHOOL MIDDLETOWN
R -v- SJM 4

HEADQUARTERS
THE ROYAL ULSTER CONSTABULARY
CRIME DEPARTMENT
KNOCKNAGONEY HOUSE
KNOCKNAGONEY ROAD
BELFAST
BT4 2PP

Ref No: C61/5/99

February 1999

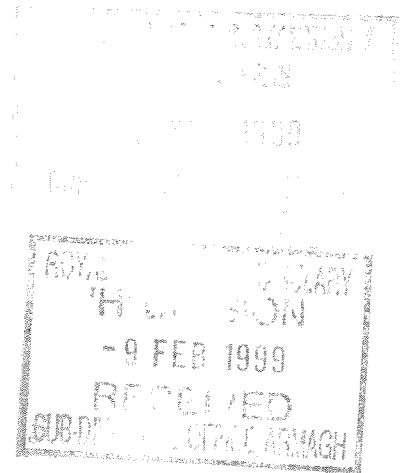
Sub Divisional Commander
Armagh

- 1 The copy directions of the Director of Public Prosecutions are forwarded herewith for information and compliance.
- 2 Please inform interested parties in the following terms:
"On the basis of the facts and information available, the Director has directed no prosecution in this case."
- 3 Return main file to this Office for filing.



for Chief Constable

D/Superintendent



(042) 933 4752 / 933 4753
(042) 933 4751
regionalate@stlouisirl.ie



St. Louis Regional House,
60 Ard Easmuinn,
Dundalk,
Co. Louth.

Strictly Private and [REDACTED]

The Public Protection Unit
The Police Service of Northern Ireland
14 Castlewellan Road, Banbridge BT32 4AX

Sept. 6, 2013

Dear Sir,

Re: SJM 60 [REDACTED]

I am the Regional Leader of the Sisters of St Louis in Ireland and I am authorised by our Central Leadership Team and by our Regional Team to provide information regarding an historical child protection issue. I am writing to notify the PSNI that the Sisters of St Louis have received information regarding an allegation of historical sexual abuse at an institution which is now closed but at the relevant time was governed by the Sisters of St Louis. The details of the allegation are as follows:-

The individual who has made the allegation is SJM 60 [REDACTED], Date of Birth: [REDACTED] SJM 60 [REDACTED] was resident in St Joseph's Middletown, County Armagh from 6th October 1977 until 5th October 1980. SJM 60 [REDACTED] has very recently informed one of our Sisters that she was abused by a non- religious member of St Joseph's Middletown staff during her time as a resident.

The Sister was told by SJM 60 [REDACTED] that she had disclosed this allegation to a nursing professional who has in turn reported it to PSNI. We have also contacted the Chief Executive of Southern Health & Social Care Trust to put the Department of Health on notice of this allegation.

Carson McDowell, Solicitors (Murray House, Murray Street, Belfast BT1 6DN) represent the interests of the Sisters of St Louis in relation to historical allegations. If you wish to discuss the above allegation further, or if you wish us to provide any additional information we would be grateful if you would direct the request for information via Orlagh O'Neill, Solicitor, Carson McDowell, Solicitors, Murray House, Murray Street, Belfast BT1 6DN. Telephone 028 90 34 88 26.

I would be grateful if you would acknowledge receipt of this correspondence.

Yours sincerely, [REDACTED]

Regional Leader for the Sisters of St Louis Ireland

Cc Orlagh O'Neill, Carson McDowell Solicitor

Cc [REDACTED]

STATEMENT OF WITNESS

STATEMENT OF:

SJM 59

Name

Rank

AGE OF WITNESS (if over 18 enter "over 18"):

OVER 18

TO BE COMPLETED
WHEN THE
STATEMENT HAS
BEEN WRITTEN

I declare that this statement consisting of _____ pages, each signed by me is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in evidence at a preliminary enquiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable to prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it anything which I know to be false or do not believe to be true.

Dated this

2nd

day of

June

2004

SJM 59

statement was recorded or received

PRINT NAME IN CAPS

I want someone to write down what I have to say as I was abused a long number of years ago when I was in St Joseph's Home, St Louis Convent, Middletown. There were firstly three other girls in the home I don't really know why I was put in there but the nuns used to say it was because I looked like my dad and seemingly he was no good. I went to St Joseph's when I was 9 years old in 1954. I had been in another home from I was 3 until 9, but cannot recall any problems there. The home was run by the nuns of St Louis which is a French order. The home was in the grounds of the convent and there was also the school. I went to the school along with the day girls from the village and surrounding area. In the home I slept in a dormitory along with about 20 other girls. The name of it was The Sacred Heart. On the wall was a great big picture of the Sacred Heart. I was there about 4 days when I experienced my first piece of physical abuse. One morning at breakfast which

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: [REDACTED] SJM 59

STATEMENT PAGE NO: 1

consisted of porridge first, then bread, margarine and tea. I passed my porridge to [REDACTED] and was caught by a nun named [REDACTED] SR 237

She was the head nun over me in the children's home. When she saw me do this she went crazy punching me about the ears and head. I didn't like the porridge as it was lumpy and she demanded I ate it. I could feel my stomach churn. [REDACTED] SR 237

told me to open my mouth, hold my nose closed and started to shovel the porridge into my mouth. I was choking as she was doing it so fast and I actually vomited and she fed me the vomit which she had scraped off my clothes. She kept telling me that my mother was too poor to buy porridge, I never had decent food and who did I think I was, I was nothing but the devil's spawn. This incident was witnessed by all the other girls. Any sort of punishment had to be done publicly in front of all the other girls. This would have normally been done in the evening after the last meal at about 6.00pm. We were lined up around the walls of the room where we had our food and were called out for punishment if we had done something wrong during the day. A typical day in the home was I got up at 5.30am, knelt at the side of my bed for prayers, then got washed, dressed, there were curtains around every bed in the dormitory. I then had proper prayers in front of the Sacred Heart. After them I had to make my bed in a certain way

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

SJM 59

STATEMENT OF:

STATEMENT PAGE NO: 2

everything was folded neatly on the bed. My nightdress which was long and blue and white stripe was placed under the pillow. There then followed the ritual cleaning of the dormitory and all the other rooms. This was carried out before Mass and had to be done in silence. The silence had to be observed from 8.30 PM the previous evening. After Mass I came back to the room for breakfast and after breakfast more chores. At about five to nine I was lined up with other girls for school. School was good, there was no abuse there, it was run by SR 256. For lunch it was back to the home and then back to school. School finished at 3.30 pm and then I helped clean the school. When that was done, it was back to the home. There followed more chores if it was raining but if it was good I got for a walk. Another incident I vividly remember was at a mealtime. There were 4 girls to a table, we each had our own cutlery which was numbered - it consisted of a knife, fork, dessertspoon, soup spoon, butter knife, teaspoon, cup, saucer and plate. Mine was number 27. In the middle of the table was a large plastic bowl full of water. This was used to wash our cutlery in. The dirty water from this bowl was then put into a slop bucket which was on a sewing table at the bottom of the room. This particular evening SR 271 called me to empty one of the buckets which was heavy and awkward to get off the table. When I lifted the bucket down some of

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: SJM 59 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 3

water splashed onto the floor. SR 271 started shouting at me which made me more nervous as I was really frightened of her. Someone else was called to take the bucket from me. SR 271 then wrestled me to the floor of the room and started to punch and kick me. She also made me suck up as much of the water as I could while she held me by the hair pushing my head and face into the dirty water. While she was doing this she kept calling me the devil's child. Another occasion I remember needing new shoes and given a pair that were men's shoes. These shoes were too big and on that particular day I was going out for a walk. I was heading towards steps and said to SR 237 that I couldn't walk in them. I was crying. The next thing I know SR 237 had given me a really hard punch on the back and I ended up falling down some steps. When I got up the skin was off my knee and there was a lot of blood. SR 238 took me to a hospital in Armagh where I had stitches put in. Yet another occasion was when I had a loose tooth and SR 271 had put a piece of string around it and tied it to a door knob to pull it out, I was crying and said to her I would wiggle it out myself. She lost her temper with me and threw me over the banisters. I must have fell about 10 feet and I was badly bruised and hurt my back. After that I spent about 2 weeks in the infirmary. On an occasion

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: SJM 59

STATEMENT PAGE NO: 4

at a mealtime I had been given a lamb sausage. When I stuck my fork into it, it skidded off the plate. SR 271 saw this and she came at me with a knife which actually cut my nose. Another time when I was told to prepare beelroot, I didn't know that it had to be run under water, so I started to peel it and it bled. SR 271 again saw this and she took a knife, cut my finger and told me she would make me bleed. There were numerous other times when I punched, kicked or generally abused by SR 271. SR 271 during my stay in the home from 1954 until 1961 I left the home when I was 16 years old. To continue with my story, there were numerous times that I was in the infirmary for various injuries. SR 238 would have been in charge of the sick in the infirmary. While in there the normal clothes worn was a long white night shirt and I wasn't allowed to wear underpants. It didn't matter what sort of a problem I had. SR 238 always used like a yellow ointment which she seemed to spread it anywhere. There was only ever one patient in it at the time and the infirmary was next door to the dormitory. SR 238 sexually abused me on a number of occasions. When she was taking my temperature she always would have put the thermometer up my bottom. While it was there SR 238 would have put her fingers into my vagina. When she was doing this I was absolutely terrified but

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: SJM 59

STATEMENT PAGE NO: 5

couldn't do anything or say anything to anyone or I would have got another beating. I think the worst times that SR 238 abused me was just at the end of my periods. I was only allowed 5 sanitary towels. These sanitary towels were parts of sheets made up to look like a sanitary towel. They were washed and used again and again. Again ~~to~~ my number was ^{on} them and I got the same overboard. Because I only had 5 towels and I had heavy periods by the end of my period I would have been sore and chafed and ended up in the infirmary for treatment. This is when SR 238 would have used her yellow cream. She would have rubbed it in the inside of my legs and then would have put her finger into my vagina. While she was doing she she would have sort of creamed and she also would have been rubbing herself against my bed and sort of doing circular movements with her pelvis. SR 238 SR 238 would never have asked me to touch her. SR 238 SR 238 would also have put her finger up my bottom, she would have told me to lie on my side and I was so scared that I didn't argue. The same thing happened everytime I was in the infirmary. When SR 238 made me go on my side she would always have put her clenched fists between my knees which meant that my legs would have been slightly open when I was on my side. Sometimes while in the infirmary overnight SR 238 would have come

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

STATEMENT OF: SJM 59 STATEMENT PAGE NO: 6

in and got into bed beside me. She would have done the same misreading of the finger. She would not have undressed except for her dressing gown. Whilst I stayed in the home my mother would have visited very infrequently. I can recall telling her about being physically hurt but she called me a liar. I have never disclosed this information to anyone until now as this statement is written. Through all my years in the home the abuse remained much the same. I never could seem to do right for wrong. I never know what was going to trigger their temper and then I would get a beating then end up in the infirmary where the sexual abuse went on. I remember the day I left, there was a lady called [REDACTED] came and collected me to start a job. I stayed in her house overnight and was taken to my job the next day. My first job was with a [REDACTED] who lived on the [REDACTED]. I left the home on 1st June, 1961 and never returned.

20/2/06

Our Reference:

Your Reference:

Mr Patrick McGrath
Irwin Mc Grath
Solicitors
72 High Street
Belfast

ALLEGATION MADE BY SJM 59

Dear Mr Mc Grath,

I am writing to you in relation to your letter dated 13th February 2007 regarding the above person. Enquiries had been made by myself in relation to the nuns mentioned by SJM 59 in her initial complaint. It was discovered that 2 of the nuns are now deceased, one other nun had left the order and the final nun who was still alive resided in a home in Co, Monaghan and suffered from senile dementia.

In light of SR 238 it was decided she could not be interviewed due to her medical condition.

From the statement of SJM 59 the St Joseph's Home, St Louis Convent was a French Order.

I hope this has been of help to you and if I can be of any further assistance do not hesitate to contact me.

Yours faithfully

PRIVATE

was asked about why I ran away, I always just told lies. My sister **NHB 9** would run away from the Good Shepherd and come over and get me and the two of us would go on the run together. We were always caught and brought back.

SR 31 would stand chatting nicely to the police, and as soon as they left, she would grab me and start beating me, and again I would be told to kneel and pray outside her cell all night.

20. On one occasion, when I was aged about fourteen or fifteen years, my sister **NHB 9** ran away from Middletown and came to see me in Nazareth House. We ran away together, and made it to Armagh, where we stayed with a friend of **NHB 9** for a few days. This girl's mother however rang the police and said that we had broken into the electric meter in her home, even though it wasn't us. We were arrested and kept in Armagh police station until a Social Worker arrived. They were going to take me back to Nazareth House but I begged them not to. I told them that if they took me back there, I would just keep running away. The Social Worker had to take me to Court in Belfast to get a Court Order stating that I was to go to Middletown.

St Joseph's Training School, Middletown, Co. Armagh, 1977 - 1979

21. I loved it in Middletown. The nuns were brilliant. By the time I arrived **NHB 9** and **NHB 8** had left. The staff members were so good to us. I still keep in contact with them. Whilst I was in Middletown I went to school onsite.

22. Brendan Smyth came to visit me in Middletown and it hit me that he had followed me there. I was older at the time, and I asked a staff member, **SJM 5** **SJM 5**, to stay in the room with me. I refused to speak to him the whole time, so **SJM 5** did all the talking. He gave me five pounds and a bag of sweets and left. I told **SJM 5** that he scares me. **SJM 5** was surprised that I didn't want to see this man since I never had any visitors. She rang **SJM 11** and told her that a priest, Brendan Smyth, had come to see me but that I didn't want to see him. **SR 240** told him not to come to the convent again. She ran out to his car, chased him and said "don't you dare come up here again, you're not welcome here". Brendan Smyth had previously visited both

PRIVATE

my right hand and there was no need to hold me down. She beat me black and blue up and down my back and my legs with the cane in front of the other girls. She bruised my skin but I don't remember it bleeding. After she finished beating me, she said 'Go and show those stripes to whoever you like.' She must have felt guilty afterwards because she had some sweets which she tried to give me but I refused to take them.

6. SR237 [REDACTED] also used to make demeaning remarks about my mother in front of the other girls. She told me that I would 'end up in jail like your mother' and also that 'she didn't want you and so we had to look after you'. She said these things on a daily basis to hurt me. I didn't know then that my mother had been in prison.
7. I always loved music. I was taught how to play the piano at St Joseph's by SR255 [REDACTED] and I was a member of the convent choir. On one occasion I went up to SR237 [REDACTED] and told her that I passed my music exam at school. I was so pleased to pass. It gave me a sense of achievement. She lifted her hand and slapped me across the face. I always felt that she singled me out and treated me worse than the other children.
8. The school and the part of the convent where we lived were within one big building. The nuns lived in a separate building within the convent grounds. Different nuns taught us in school and there were no lay teachers. The nuns who taught me would not normally have come to the part of the convent where we lived. SR256 [REDACTED] was one of my teachers. She was kind and protected me. She came down to the home one day after school and saw SR237 [REDACTED] hurrying me down the stairs. She was pushing me and saying 'Get down you'. She said to her 'Sister, I am going to complain to Reverend Mother about you'. SR237 [REDACTED] stopped pushing me on this occasion. She continued to abuse me though when no-one was around and this behaviour continued until the day I left the Convent. No-one ever intervened or did anything to stop it.

1 you had about those trips --

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. -- and getting Easter eggs and things from the [REDACTED]
4 family. You also remember going, as I say, on summer
5 holiday to Glenariff each year.

6 A. That's right.

7 Q. You also then go on at paragraph 12 to talk about
8 another incident involving SR237 where one of the adult
9 girls who left the convent sent you a present --

10 A. That's right.

11 Q. -- once at Christmas time. Now I think this girl was
12 actually someone who was a day girl in the school.

13 A. No. She was --

14 Q. Sorry.

15 A. -- in the convent with me, but she was an adult, as we
16 called her. She was an adult and she left.

17 Q. Because she was that bit older than you?

18 A. Yes, yes.

19 Q. You say it was a beautiful scarf. You were so pleased
20 and excited, because at that time no-one sent you
21 presents, but SR237 took it off you and she told you,
22 "We have no pets here".

23 A. That's right.

24 Q. Sorry. I am mixing this girl up with the next girl, who
25 was someone who you were at school with. One year on

1 your birthday when you were 12 or 13, she lived in the
2 town, and you really wanted a packet of hair rollers as
3 a present to curl your hair. So she got that for you.

4 A. That's right.

5 Q. You were excited and pleased with them and you wet your
6 hair and put the rollers in that night. SR237 you say
7 came out of her cell and when she saw you had rollers in
8 your hair, she became very angry, pulled them all out of
9 your hair while you were sleeping, again saying, "We
10 have no pets here".

11 A. That's right.

12 Q. You were telling me that you actually remember being
13 wakened out of your sleep with these rollers being
14 pulled from your hair.

15 A. That's right, yes.

16 Q. You describe the routine in the convent in paragraphs 13
17 and 14 here. You say that the routine was that you got
18 up in the morning. You got up about 5.00 or 5.30. You
19 had to go to 6 o'clock mass. Sometimes you were so
20 tired you would fall asleep while you were kneeling at
21 mass. If she saw you sleeping, SR237 would come over
22 and flick you with her finger.

23 A. That's right.

24 Q. You demonstrated that to me when we were talking. You
25 then came back to the convent, made your beds, cleaned

1 A. Yes. Well, as it just happened, we happened to be
2 passing.

3 Q. You and DL222 ?

4 A. Me and DL222 and we actually seen her through the door.
5 So, of course, we opened the door and run out and -- you
6 know, to see her.

7 Q. You make reference to her being called names.

8 A. Yes.

9 Q. I was asking you, "Who did this?"

10 A. Well, like, SR237 and SR242, you know, saying she was
11 unholy, she was a fallen woman, you know, you shouldn't
12 be around people like this, you know, that type of
13 thing. I mean, back in the day I suppose, you know,
14 they didn't like people that weren't married and had
15 children out of, you know, as they call wedlock. You
16 know, they had a funny attitude when it came to people
17 that weren't married and even more so is because even if
18 they were married, they weren't married in the Catholic
19 chapel.

20 Q. You explain in paragraph 22 of your statement at 058
21 that being kept apart from your siblings --

22 A. Yes.

23 Q. -- was the worst part. You are of the view if you could
24 have been allowed to look after each other, things might
25 have turned out differently.

PRIVATE

margarine with a mug of tea. We ate our meals in silence in the refectory. We were not allowed to talk to each other. The nuns walked up and down behind us while we were eating and they beat us with a long thin cane if they caught us talking during meal-times.

7. I remember getting beaten from time to time by each of the following nuns;

SR249 [REDACTED] SR251 [REDACTED] SR237 [REDACTED] SR250 [REDACTED] and SR252 [REDACTED]

SR252 [REDACTED] SR252 [REDACTED] had a ruler and she beat me on the front of my hands along my knuckles. It was sore. They each carried a long thin bamboo cane with them. We called it a 'sally rod'. It hurt and left red marks on my skin when I was beaten with it. We were never shown any affection by the nuns – no love at all. They were very cruel. I remember feeling frightened of them all the time.

8. The nuns frequently sent me out from school to buy newspapers for

SR253 [REDACTED] at about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. On one occasion I was sent to the shops in town to buy papers for her and I left them in her bedroom. I told her where I had left them and SR253 [REDACTED]

SR253 [REDACTED] said I was cheeky to her and accused me of lying. I think she thought this because I couldn't talk properly. I told her I wasn't being cheeky and that I didn't know what I did wrong. SR237 [REDACTED] came to me later that day and beat me with a stick. I had bruises all over my back and legs. The next day she punished me by making me stand in school against a wall with my hands held up. I stood like this for the whole school day; right from the start of school time until the end.

9. I first began my periods when I was about thirteen. I didn't know what was happening. I thought I was dying when I saw the blood and I was scared stiff to go to the toilet. I saw that my sheets were dirty and I didn't know what was wrong. I went down to the laundry that morning to wash them. SR237 [REDACTED]

SR237 [REDACTED] saw me and she thought I wet my bed. She took me upstairs to my dormitory, bent me over my bed ^{wie.} and beat me on my bare back and bottom with a long narrow stick. She beat me until she was tired and it was the worst beating I ever had the whole time I was there.

SJM 27 received are not consistent with HIA 249's memories. I did not witness such punishments in 1958-1959.

20. All the Sisters listed in paragraph 3 of the statement are deceased and Death Certificates (with the exception of SR 251 who is not known to the Louis Order) have been provided to the Inquiry.
21. I understand that SJM 27 has passed away. Prior to her death we were contacted by another of SJM 27 sisters. We were informed that SJM 27 was dying of cancer. It was her wish that as she regarded SR 248 as a mother figure, her ashes should be interred in SR 248's grave in Middletown Convent Cemetery when she died. This request was granted in 2010 before we vacated the Convent.
22. In relation to paragraph 4 (SJM-068) the nuns did sleep in a room next to each dormitory. There was one nun to each dormitory. There were fire escapes out of the dormitories but I would call these sleeping quarters rooms rather than a 'cell'.
23. I cannot comment specifically on the night time routine described in paragraph 4 (SJM-068) before or after 1958 as I never slept in the dormitories. There is no evidence in any of the records to enable me to respond to the allegation that the children were not allowed to talk to each other or leave their beds even to go to the toilet. If this was the regime then I accept that it is not appropriate to forbid children from getting out of bed for a genuine reason such as needing the toilet. Some discipline would be required in relation to talking or ensuring children (particularly young children) were settled in bed and able to sleep. It would be appropriate to have rules which discouraged talking after lights went out.
24. In paragraph 5, (SJM -068) HIA 249 states that she was required to perform a number of cleaning duties. Again, I have no first hand evidence of the regime that was in place between 1947 and 1958 when HIA 249 was a resident. My only memory relates to the period from 1958 to 1959 and with the passage of time that is vague. It is my recollection that the girls did assist with chores but I cannot confirm the exact regime. I also remember that girls put clothes on their feet to help to polish the floors. I find it difficult to accept that the girls were punished for doing this. I recall that this was how the floors were actually cleaned so it was easier to get the wax off the floors using the cloth on your feet.

PRIVATE

16. Following the three days without food I was taken to Monaghan. SR235 was driving the car and my sister HIA176, SJM16 and SJM12 were also present. I must have misbehaved during the journey. SR235 stopped the car and dragged me out by the hair and put me in the boot. I remember having to stop at the British Army check point at the Border and a Solider asked SR235 to open the boot. The Solider asked her why I was in the boot and she told him because I was talking too much and not listening. The Solider just closed the boot leaving me inside. When we arrived back at Middletown I went to the dormitory. SR240 came in and gave me a beating. I recall on this occasion SR240 punched, slapped and pulled my hair.
17. I received beatings and I witnessed other residents receive beating from SR240 SR240 SR244 SJM4 from House 1 and SJM1 from House 2, however, SR240 was the most brutal. My sister HIA176 became pregnant whilst in Middletown. SR240 beat me and told me it was my fault as I was the oldest. I was older by [REDACTED]. I would describe my time in Middletown as a living hell, even when I was in bed sleeping I recall getting beatings.
18. I also remember being beaten by other girls in Middleton. I remember the [REDACTED] girls being the worst for the beatings.
19. In Middletown there was a Sister called SR246 she had permed hair. Myself and another girl from [REDACTED] called SJM17 were her favourites. SR246 would come up to our dormitory at around 10.30pm and take us down to her living area. She would make us chips and let us sit at the fire. She would be drinking vodka and smoking. She would ask us questions about boyfriends, kissing and sex. I was just thirteen I had not kissed anyone before let alone had sex. At the time I didn't really understand what she was talking about. SJM17 and I never told anyone about this because we were getting chips, cigarettes and allowed to stay up late.

completely inconsistent with how we sought to support and maintain links between the girls and their parents. There are diary entries which I have attached marked **BD2** also record the parental visits to see **HIA 376** and also when she may have phoned home. Please see by way of example only entries on 24 October 1983, 7 November 1983, 25 November 1983, 1 February 1984, 3 February 1984. I must also state that there is no evidence other than **HIA 376**'s statement that she suffered beatings in Middletown at any time.

27. At paragraph 15 (SJM – 063) **HIA 376** describes an incident in which she locked herself in the boot of a car and took an overdose of tablets when she was in House 2. I have not been able to locate any record of such an incident other than one record in the nurse's reports for St. Joseph's of **HIA 376** taking an overdose of 9 Phyllocontin tablets on 11.07.83 after which she was admitted to Craigavon Area Hospital and discharged on 13.07.83. The **SR 234** she refers to is **SR 234** who was a member of senior staff at St. Joseph's during the 1980's when **HIA 376** was resident. During my time in St Joseph's we never withdrew food from any girl either as a form of punishment or for any other reason. Had a girl taken an overdose it is likely she would have been hospitalised immediately. After her return to St Joseph's she would have been assessed and if appropriate received treatment through counselling and psychological therapies possibly remaining in her own house or if the case was very serious she would have been admitted to the intensive care unit at St. Joseph's. In my experience there would never have been a punishment meted out as **HIA 376** describes. A copy of the nurses entry for 11 July 1983 is attached marked **BD5**.

28. **HIA 376** then goes on at paragraph 16 of her statement (SJM – 064) to describe being taken to Monaghan by me. I can say without hesitation that the incident which she described did not happen. The only reason for the journey to Monaghan by car

PRIVATE

the more she would beat me. I quickly learned that I had to behave. SR240

SR240 would tell me that my parents didn't want me and that was why I was in Middletown. She would also tell me that I was dirty. The House Mother from House 1, SJM4 and SJM1 told me to keep my mouth shut and my head down and I would be alright.

7. We received pocket money in Middletown. On a Friday we were allowed to go to the village to spend it. I would have spent my pocket money on cigarettes.
8. There was a record book kept in Middletown which recorded our behaviour during the day. I believe the nuns who looked after us in the evening used this record against us. If we misbehaved during the day the nuns would punish us in the evening.
9. A daily task in Middletown was to clean and dust the dormitory. We would have to get up very early to clean and dust before going to Mass. We would not have had breakfast until we returned from Mass. SR243 who is now deceased would inspect the dormitories. She would wear a white glove and run her finger along an area to check if we had cleaned it correctly. If the room was not to her satisfaction she would wreck it, beat us and make us do it again.
10. On a Saturday we were made to clean all day from 9.00am to 6.00pm with one 5 minute break and a lunch break. My hands would have been red raw from the cleaning. Literally all the furniture of the house had to be taken outside to the garden to allow for cleaning. SR244 used to tell me I was a great cleaner. However, I recall on one occasion there was a tea stain in the sink and SR244 SR244 grabbed me by the ears, dragged me to the sink before slapping me across the head. She told me that I would get no tea until it was spotless. I also recall having to polish the wooden floors. I would turn a carpet tile upside down and slide along the floor to make it shine.
11. Another daily duty in Middletown was kitchen duty. I did not like kitchen duty but I always seemed to be put on kitchen duty. This involved washing and peeling

PRIVATE

Life After Care

26. I was at my mother's flat with my mother and sister. [REDACTED] was on the same floor as us and knew all of us. We were standing in the landing and we heard shooting. He grabbed me and pulled me into his flat and then raped me. He was in his twenties and I had just turned sixteen. I got pregnant and was sent back to Middletown. [REDACTED] SR240 said I was very lucky I was pregnant otherwise she would have beaten it out of me. She was pressurising me to get me into a mother and baby home. She said I was a whore and I was unfit to be a mother. They were determined to take the child from me. The staff in Middletown knew how I got pregnant because I told them exactly what happened. I also told my social worker, [REDACTED] SJM56. I never got any help after the rape.
27. It was known that if I had told the police about the rape at the time in Derry, because it was rape of an underage girl, he would have been shot so I did not tell the police until about four or five years ago. They arrested him in England and took him back to Northern Ireland for questioning. I do not know what happened to him after that. I do not have any contact with him.
28. A Social Worker called [REDACTED] got involved when my son, [REDACTED] was born and said I was not suitable or responsible enough. Social Services were going to take the child from me. Regardless of the circumstances of how I got pregnant, I did not want them to take my child from me. They were quick not to support me. I moved in with my mother and had my baby. When my son was one, I went to England to study nursing. We agreed, my mother would bring my son up but I could not bear to be away from him, so my mother agreed to come over to England.
29. I ended up working as a prison officer in [REDACTED] Prison in London for eleven years and my son joined the army. I married and had a daughter called [REDACTED]. I divorced her father. My son sexually assaulted my daughter when she was six and my ex husband took her away to live in [REDACTED]. I have not seen my daughter since she was six years old. I have tried emailing her father but he has not responded. She is now 17 years old. I do not have any contact

9. I have been completely unaware until I read the Applicant's statement to the Inquiry of the allegation made by HIA176 that she had been raped. There is no record on file that she ever said or intimated to me that she had been the victim of a sexual assault during the time when I worked with this case. I note from the file record that she became pregnant in September 1984, which was some eighteen months after my last contact with her.

I believe that the facts stated in this witness statement are true

SJM 56

Signed _____

Dated _____

19 02 2016

a health centre in Derry on 21st September 1984 which was attended by her social work team. **SJM 79** her social worker reported that **HIA 176** was doing well at her job and at home. My understanding is that one of the reasons why **HIA 176** returned to St. Joseph's on the 29th September was because she was by this stage pregnant. St. Joseph's was considered to be a stable place for her for a couple of months while preparations were made by her mother to have **HIA 176** and her new baby stay with her at her flat.

28. At paragraph 26 onwards I have read **HIA 176**'s description of her life after care. I am genuinely saddened to read how unhappy she was after she left St. Joseph's. I can only comment on what she says at paragraph 26 regarding **[REDACTED]** and her subsequent pregnancy. We have very clear records beginning on 21st September 1984 regarding **HIA 176**'s announcement that she was pregnant and that the father was **[REDACTED]**. I would ask the Inquiry to read those carefully which can be found as part of the diary entries at **BD 3**. We have no evidence that **HIA 176** had been raped but I know there were concerns by staff at St. Joseph's and her social worker about **[REDACTED]** and whether he was a positive influence on **HIA 176**. I was not made aware nor is there any records which confirm the comments which **HIA 176** attributes to **SJM 11** regarding her pregnancy. There were a number of girls who became pregnant while at St. Joseph's and they stayed in St. Joseph's for a period of time during their pregnancy and then may have returned home. I can recall at least two other girls who remained at St. Joseph's in our hostel with their babies, one for six months. The hostel had been specially adapted so that it could accommodate a mother and her baby. I also point to the fact that **HIA 176** returned willingly to St. Joseph's between May and October 1984 and the diary entries which confirm that she was very happy returning to House 3. As mentioned above she also came back to stay for a night with us together with her baby and her twin sister- see diary entry entry at **BD 11**. These contemporaneous records suggest to me that **HIA 176** felt that St. Joseph's was a safe place for her during her pregnancy.

PRIVATE

my mother and my step-father [REDACTED] in Derry. Being [REDACTED] and living in Northern Ireland with the troubles was very traumatic. I immediately realised that I had to try to fit in so I tried to lose my [REDACTED] accent and pick up a Derry accent. My twin, HIA376 [REDACTED] was then sent over to Northern Ireland six months later.

4. I was in my mother's care on and off from when I was nine years old until I was thirteen years old. She would disappear to England and she spent some time in [REDACTED] Prison. She went to work in England because her mother was still living there and she said she would send money home. My mother left us with our step-father who was extremely violent towards me and my twin sister because we were not his children. When my mother was away, we had to take on the maternal role and look after our step-sister [REDACTED]. On a Monday morning, when everyone else was going to school, we were sent to get the Giro money and the family allowance. We then had to get the week's shopping. Our step-father spent his time in the pub and when he came back home, he was always drunk and abusive. I think the Social Services became involved because of the neglect and the abuse. When I was thirteen, he gave me a severe beating and threw me down the stairs one night. I ran to a neighbour's house and they rang Social Services. My mother was there the night it happened. After that, I was removed from my sisters and taken to Harberton House and never went home again. I was removed first. I could never understand why I was the one removed and put in to a home when I had done nothing wrong. He abused me and I felt as though I was the one being punished by being taken away from my sisters and my home. It should have been him removed.

Harberton House (approx 1982)

5. I only stayed in Harberton House for a few months. My step-father started to beat HIA376 [REDACTED] and she was then placed in Harberton House too. However, just as she was being placed in Harberton, I was transferred to Middletown.

a health centre in Derry on 21st September 1984 which was attended by her social work team. **SJM 79** her social worker reported that **HIA 176** was doing well at her job and at home. My understanding is that one of the reasons why **HIA 176** returned to St. Joseph's on the 29th September was because she was by this stage pregnant. St. Joseph's was considered to be a stable place for her for a couple of months while preparations were made by her mother to have **HIA 176** and her new baby stay with her at her flat.

28. At paragraph 26 onwards I have read **HIA 176**'s description of her life after care. I am genuinely saddened to read how unhappy she was after she left St. Joseph's. I can only comment on what she says at paragraph 26 regarding **[REDACTED]** and her subsequent pregnancy. We have very clear records beginning on 21st September 1984 regarding **HIA 176**'s announcement that she was pregnant and that the father was **[REDACTED]**. I would ask the Inquiry to read those carefully which can be found as part of the diary entries at **BD 3**. We have no evidence that **HIA 176** had been raped but I know there were concerns by staff at St. Joseph's and her social worker about **[REDACTED]** and whether he was a positive influence on **HIA 176**. I was not made aware nor is there any records which confirm the comments which **HIA 176** attributes to **SJM 11** regarding her pregnancy. There were a number of girls who became pregnant while at St. Joseph's and they stayed in St. Joseph's for a period of time during their pregnancy and then may have returned home. I can recall at least two other girls who remained at St. Joseph's in our hostel with their babies, one for six months. The hostel had been specially adapted so that it could accommodate a mother and her baby. I also point to the fact that **HIA 176** returned willingly to St. Joseph's between May and October 1984 and the diary entries which confirm that she was very happy returning to House 3. As mentioned above she also came back to stay for a night with us together with her baby and her twin sister- see diary entry entry at **BD 11**. These contemporaneous records suggest to me that **HIA 176** felt that St. Joseph's was a safe place for her during her pregnancy.

PRIVATE

10. [SJM4] was horrible to me. She used to refer to me as the Derry Hog. My sister came to Middletown with another few girls from Derry and she referred to us all as the Derry Hogs. She was also quite physical. She would be the one who would hit you, shove you about and punish you. She was a very big woman and she flung me about a few times. The abuse I suffered from her was mostly verbal and emotional. She was a bully. Everyone was terrified of her. I remember asking her one day if I could get fitted for a bra and she just laughed and said you need to have a chest to get a bra. She was very derogatory. I was not in House One for long. When my twin sister, [HIA376] was moved to Middletown, we were separated soon after. She came in to House One and I was moved to House Three. Residential Social Worker, [SJM43] was Head of House 3. She lived in a flat on site. [SR243] and [SR 257] worked in House 3 and it was more relaxed. House One and Two were joined together with a big corridor and house Three and Four were joined together. [SR244] was the House Mother of House 2 and [SJM44] was the House Mother of House 4.
11. The only time I was able to see my twin, [HIA376] was at school but we were still divided into separate groups. We were not allowed to visit each other's Houses. If I went to House One to see [HIA376] [SJM4] would ask "What do you want Derry Hog?" and send me away. I thought it was wrong and cruel to keep us separated like that as we were identical twins. On one occasion, [HIA376] was rushed to [REDACTED] Hospital after taking an overdose with another girl's tablets. She was in intensive care and could have died. I do not think she meant to kill herself. I think her and her friend, [SJM14], were trying to get high or whatever. [SJM14] was very bad with asthma and had steroid tablets. They were both rushed to hospital. None of the Sisters or staff told me. I only found out from another girl. When I asked [SR240] about her she told me to go on about my business and that my sister would be alright. They refused to take me to see her. Even when my sister was discharged from hospital, I was not allowed to go to her house to visit her. When she recovered, the only times I saw her was in Chapel, the school hall and the dinner hall.
12. Our daily routine was to get up, washed and get dressed, make beds and then go downstairs for breakfast. We would have had tea and toast and then we did

(Give content facts in chronological order with clarity and brevity. Do not merely repeat witness statements. Where more than one person reported summarise the case against each

Whilst the aim should be to summarise the facts on one page, a continuation page may be used if it is necessary for the inclusion of all the salient facts.)

On Thursday 3 September 1998 SJM 58 [redacted] contacted [redacted] CARE Unit asking to speak to CARE regarding allegations of sexual abuse which occurred at St Joseph's Training School, Middletown between January 1976 and December 1977.

On 7 September 1998 a statement of complaint was recorded from SJM 58 [redacted] by D/Constable CARTMILL regarding having been sexually assaulted by SJM 4 [redacted] on a number of occasions whilst she was at St Joseph's Training School.

The abuse included digital penetration by SJM 4 [redacted] on SJM 58 [redacted], digital sex and oral sex involving both females. SJM 58 [redacted] remembers herself being known as "SJM 4's child" amongst staff and children.

SJM 58 [redacted] recalls on her arrival at St Joseph's Training School of a girl known as SJM 109 [redacted] who had absconded in order to marry a person known as [redacted]. She had done this in order to get away from SJM 4 [redacted]. SJM 109 [redacted] was also known as SJM 4's child. SJM 58 [redacted] did not speak to anyone about her abuse whilst at St Joseph's, neither over the years has she spoken to anyone about her abuse. She has spent time in Craigavon Psychiatric Unit but never revealed anything during that time.

She did speak to a "friend" (sponsor) in Alcoholics Anonymous but refused to give his name.

On 15 September 1998 SJM 4 [redacted] attended Banbridge RUC Station as a voluntary attender accompanied by her Solicitor, Mr NOEL PHOENIX. D/Constable G SPROULE was also present. PACE 10 was completed accordingly and the interview which commenced at 1445 hours and terminated 1529 hours was tape recorded. During interview SJM 4 [redacted] explained that SJM 58 [redacted] would have been known as SJM 4's child, as were other children and that each house parent was known to have their favourites. She agreed that she had bought presents for SJM 58 [redacted] but denied that anything inappropriate had ever occurred. She had kept in contact with SJM 58 [redacted] over the years but not on a consistent nature as SJM 58 [redacted] had a heavy drink problem and would ring at anytime drunk. SJM 58 [redacted] did ring her regularly and recently told her that she was going to report the matter to police. SJM 4 [redacted] advised SJM 11 [redacted] St Joseph's of the content of the telephone conversation that had taken place, outlining that she had refused to give SJM 58 [redacted] any further money or support her emotionally to the extent she had.


On the same date a statement was recorded from [redacted], outlining [redacted]'s behaviour.

On 21 September 1998 a statement was recorded from SJM 109 [redacted]. SJM 109 [redacted] was shocked to hear of the allegations and firmly denied anything ever happening to her. She stated that she had the utmost respect for SJM 4 [redacted] and still did. She had never heard of anything happening to any other girl.

On Sunday 25 October 1998 [redacted] was contacted by telephone and spoken to by D/Constable Cartmill regarding her knowledge of SJM 4 [redacted]. SJM 4 [redacted], like SJM 109 [redacted], had the greatest respect for

I certify that all witness statements taken by police in connection with this investigation are included in this file.

To be signed by investigating officer


NAME
G CARTMILL

D/CONST PW1264
RANK NO.

which records a call to the hostel staff from HIA 376. She gave staff her new address and told us about her baby having been christened.

30. I am genuinely distressed to read what HIA 376 says at paragraph 17 (SJM – 064) describing her time in St. Joseph's as "a living hell" and that she recalls getting beatings even when she was in bed sleeping. I can only speak of my personal experience as a member of staff at St. Joseph's and also having reviewed our records of that time. As I have already said beating a child in a way that HIA 376 has recalled is entirely wrong as every child who came into St. Joseph's had the expectation that they would be kept safe in our care. I believe every child was kept safe in our care and I do not believe HIA 376 has accurately recalled the care and support that she received. Moreover I would point to the documentary records that we have retained which are inconsistent with her memories. In particular our last diary entry confirms HIA 376 making contact with our staff in order that she could give us her new address. This would suggest to me that she had positive relations with our staff.

31. At paragraph 19 (SJM – 064) I believe that the Sister SR 246 HIA 376 is referring to is Sister SR 246 who left our Order at the age of 30 in 1984. Staff were not allowed to drink alcohol while on duty. There would not have been any alcohol in any of the houses. All the girls went up to bed at 10.00 p.m. during the week with lights out at 11.00 p.m. but there were later bed times at the weekend. If the incident which Michelle recalls happened it would have been very wrong. I have to say I find it difficult to believe that it did happen as she describes. Any behaviour by a member of staff which favoured one girl over another girl would quickly have led to an enquiry if not by the other staff members by the other girls. They were very conscious of anything that could be perceived as favouring one girl over another. In addition because we had a strict lights out policy it would have been clear to the senior member of staff on duty at night that the lights in one house had not been turned off

PRIVATE

our chores. We all had cleaning duties to be carried out on a weekly rota. One week was kitchen duty, the next was living room duty, the week after was dorm duty and so on. We had to be finished cleaning by half past nine and then we were taken over to the Chapel for prayers and sent to the school. We had lunch at school and a cup of tea at four o'clock in the House when we got back. We would have dinner about 5pm or 6pm and we got a drink, like a cup of tea, about 8pm or 9pm before bed.

13. There was a points system for pocket money. We would start off with 150 points and then have points taken off us if we did anything wrong. Points could be deducted for something trivial as forgetting to wash your cup. I think we got about £2.00 or £2.50 for pocket money. If you didn't get full points then you didn't get your pocket money. All the girls were brought together and the staff would go through the points awarded in front of everyone and detail what points were lost for. You were publically humiliated.
14. We all had to do our own laundry and we had set laundry days. There was a laundry room but no washing machine. We had to wash our clothes by hand with a bar of soap and a scrubbing brush. On a Saturday morning, we had to wax the wooden floors in the Houses. We waxed the floors on our hands and knees using cloths and bee's wax. We then had to buff it with the big industrial buffers to shine it up. SR258 would then inspect it with white gloves and if it was not done to her satisfaction, we would lose points. SR258 did most of the cleaning inspections. She would go over your room with the white gloves on. Your room and drawers would have to be immaculate for her inspections. It was like being in the Army.
15. I remember each house had daily report books. Whichever member of staff was on that day, recorded everything that happened in the book, including if one of the girls had done something wrong.
16. There were four external teachers brought in to teach in the school. I do not feel that I received an education as I spent much of my time making gollywogs or playing bingo for cigarettes. There was a teacher called SJM45 who taught

PRIVATE

St. Joseph's Training School, Middletown, Co. Armagh (1992-1994)

23. I was thirteen years old when I was moved to St. Joseph's training school. It was out in the hills in Armagh and we thought it was great craic. SR234 and SR235 were the two nuns in St. Joseph's and they were both very nice. SR236 was a lovely woman. She would sing to try to calm you down but she left when I was there. St. Joseph's was split into four houses. I was in House 2. The staff in my house were SJM1 SJM5 and SJM2 and they were nice. We slept in dormitories with a curtain for a door.
24. We had to make our own meals but I was taken out of the kitchen because I was always putting fairy liquid in the food. I was a handful growing up but they made me like that. SR235 used to call me a 'delinquent'. Others called me an 'illegitimate bastard'. I was a nice child until nobody would believe me about the abuse. After that, I was always angry and my anger was directed towards whoever was the boss. The way I saw it every member of staff was to blame.
25. In St Joseph's the government provided five cigarettes to each girl a day. I know this because the nuns told me. We were given a full cigarette at 9am, 1pm, 4pm, 6pm and 9pm and we shared a cigarette at 11am. I started smoking in there when I was thirteen just to get something else from the system. The cigarettes were regal filters and I still smoke the same cigarettes today.
26. There were four cells which we called 'the lock up'. In the cell there was a metal bed. The cells had red doors and bars on the windows. They would put you there if you did anything wrong. I was in it many times for bad behaviour. I was put in it for two or three days at a time. I was given my usual cigarettes and water but no food at all. That was the punishment. You would be trailed there by the hair.
27. After an initial four weeks in St. Joseph's you went back to court and you'd be given another interim order for five weeks. I think fifteen weeks was the maximum short stay. St Joseph's gave us £50 after every court appearance. I

were not allocated to the breakfast/kitchen then the girls would tidy their bedrooms, do the washing up in the kitchen or prepare the fire. The girls did have to make their own meals but this was with the assistance of a staff member. The girls were not asked to do any more chores than they would have done in a family home setting.

28. All of the girls took turns to work in the kitchen and were responsible for preparing meals for everyone in the House. At paragraph 24 (SJM 026) HIA 233 states that she was taken out of the kitchen because she was putting fairy liquid in the food. I have checked HIA 233's file and there is no record of this. HIA 233's file does confirm that on occasions she was unhappy when she was allocated to working in the kitchen but other entries in her file confirm that she worked well in the kitchen. I have attached the extracts from HIA 233's file which I have marked 'BD5'.
29. HIA 233 has stated at paragraph 24 (SJM-026) of her statement that *'I was a handful growing up but they made me like that'*. HIA 233's file confirms that she did have behavioural problems during her time in St Joseph's. In August 1993 she was returned early from an outdoor pursuits holiday for sniffing glue and assaulting a 12 year old girl. However, the records suggest that HIA 233 had settled better in St Joseph's than in Harberton House.
30. At paragraph 24 (SJM – 026) of her statement, HIA 233 stated that I called her a *'delinquent'*. I have no specific recollection of this but this not the type of language that I would have used to any of the girls. She also states that other girls had called her an *'illegitimate bastard'*. There would have been a lot of name calling between the girls and several altercations but there is no specific record in HIA 233's file that she had been called an *'illegitimate bastard'*. There is a handwritten note from HIA 233 in her file confirming that she was called an *'ill-rared bastard'* by another girl called [REDACTED] and this resulted in a fight between HIA 233 and [REDACTED]. I have attached HIA 233's handwritten note marked 'BD6'. I anticipate HIA 233 is referring to this incident.
31. At paragraph 24 (SJM-026) in her statement, HIA 233 states that no one believed her about the abuse. It is confirmed in the file that regrettably HIA 233 was exposed to several incidents of abuse before she moved to St Joseph's. There is reference to abuse in one of her foster families, abuse at home and an abusive relationship with another resident in Harberton House. On 10th November 1992 just after she was admitted the summary of HIA 233's history in care made reference to abuse. On 21st January 1993 at a review meeting, it is noted that returning HIA 233 to live with her

were not allocated to the breakfast/kitchen then the girls would tidy their bedrooms, do the washing up in the kitchen or prepare the fire. The girls did have to make their own meals but this was with the assistance of a staff member. The girls were not asked to do any more chores than they would have done in a family home setting.

28. All of the girls took turns to work in the kitchen and were responsible for preparing meals for everyone in the House. At paragraph 24 (SJM 026) HIA 233 states that she was taken out of the kitchen because she was putting fairy liquid in the food. I have checked HIA 233's file and there is no record of this. HIA 233's file does confirm that on occasions she was unhappy when she was allocated to working in the kitchen but other entries in her file confirm that she worked well in the kitchen. I have attached the extracts from HIA 233's file which I have marked 'BD5'.
29. HIA 233 has stated at paragraph 24 (SJM-026) of her statement that *'I was a handful growing up but they made me like that'*. HIA 233's file confirms that she did have behavioural problems during her time in St Joseph's. In August 1993 she was returned early from an outdoor pursuits holiday for sniffing glue and assaulting a 12 year old girl. However, the records suggest that HIA 233 had settled better in St Joseph's than in Harberton House.
30. At paragraph 24 (SJM – 026) of her statement, HIA 233 stated that I called her a *'delinquent'*. I have no specific recollection of this but this not the type of language that I would have used to any of the girls. She also states that other girls had called her an *'illegitimate bastard'*. There would have been a lot of name calling between the girls and several altercations but there is no specific record in HIA 233's file that she had been called an *'illegitimate bastard'*. There is a handwritten note from HIA 233 in her file confirming that she was called an *'ill-rared bastard'* by another girl called [REDACTED] and this resulted in a fight between HIA 233 and [REDACTED]. I have attached HIA 233's handwritten note marked 'BD6'. I anticipate HIA 233 is referring to this incident.
31. At paragraph 24 (SJM-026) in her statement, HIA 233 states that no one believed her about the abuse. It is confirmed in the file that regrettably HIA 233 was exposed to several incidents of abuse before she moved to St Joseph's. There is reference to abuse in one of her foster families, abuse at home and an abusive relationship with another resident in Harberton House. On 10th November 1992 just after she was admitted the summary of HIA 233's history in care made reference to abuse. On 21st January 1993 at a review meeting, it is noted that returning HIA 233 to live with her

Mother dislikes S/Ws — they took all her children away. Once attacked a S/W with a knife — time (2 yrs) in Armagh Prison. Mother had a drink problem — now under "control" — drinks at W/Es now.

Talked about Granny's death (Father's Mother) HIA 233 loved this Granny. Granny died suddenly — HIA 233 didn't see her — she ran to try to get to see Granny dead, wasn't allowed

HIA 233 believes that she, HIA 233 and a brother are all of the same parents.

Other sisters are abused by their husbands — not really married, but they return to "live-in"

HIA 233 has great admiration for HIA 233 --- Worked in a factory & went out with HIA 233 for 8 years --- had an abortion in that time. Loved to go to HIA 233, but afraid she might intrude on HIA 233's relationship with HIA 233. HIA 233 seems to keep in touch with all the family --- often they come to her seeking support/money.

One of Mother's "live-ins" has molested HIA 233 ---

— HIA 233 made a spare reference to this fact.

HIA 233 in HIA 233 — once came to visit in Harborton. HIA 233 says she went "mad" when he only had an hour to visit her. Later staff organised another for HIA 233

PRIVATE

76. [REDACTED]

St Joseph's Training School, Middletown, County Armagh (6/4/1971 – 5/4/1974)

77. I was moved to St Joseph's Training School in Armagh under a Place of Safety Order on the 18th March 1971 when I was 14 years old.

78. I loved it. I'd never had a hug in my life and I got a hug off SR240 [REDACTED] There was SR261 [REDACTED] and SR262 [REDACTED] who was the head nun. She loved us all. They treated us like human beings and trusted us. The nuns were kind and considerate.

79. I was so happy there and the nuns were so lovely. I wished I had lived there the rest of my life. I was so happy because I was safe.

80. I left St Joseph's to go and live with my mother in [REDACTED] on the [REDACTED] 1972. I was officially discharged from St. Joseph's on the 5th April 1974.

Life after care

81. [REDACTED]

82. [REDACTED]

<p>1 shouldn't have been there, and, in fact, I shouldn't</p> <p>2 have been in there either. Again I blame the Welfare</p> <p>3 for that.</p> <p>4 Her brother was also grooming me -- her husband's</p> <p>5 brother was also grooming me when he came up to babysit.</p> <p>6 This is how I was left all my life. I was, you know,</p> <p>7 from one to another, thrown in to be groomed all the</p> <p>8 time, because the State did not keep me safe.</p> <p>9 Q. So you had been living with [REDACTED] and then you</p> <p>10 went to live in January of 1971, by which time you are</p> <p>11 14, with the Our Mother of Mercy Home in Newry, which</p> <p>12 was operated by the Sisters of Mercy.</p> <p>13 A. Yes.</p> <p>14 Q. Do you remember that --</p> <p>15 A. I remember going there.</p> <p>16 Q. -- placement?</p> <p>17 A. I liked it.</p> <p>18 Q. You liked it?</p> <p>19 A. Yes.</p> <p>20 Q. It's described in that same report -- we'll not go to it</p> <p>21 now -- in SND-4516 as being a family group type home</p> <p>22 supervised by trained staff. You mentioned to me</p> <p>23 earlier that you did abscond from there and went back to</p> <p>24 --</p> <p>25 A. Newry. I just kept -- I just kept searching for this</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Page 29</p>	<p>1 A. I loved the place. I loved it. I felt so safe.</p> <p>2 Q. You felt safe while you were there?</p> <p>3 A. My body was safe. I was safe in my bed at night.</p> <p>4 Q. And the Inquiry will have the chance to see that in 1972</p> <p>5 efforts were made for you to go out on licence to live</p> <p>6 with your family, and eventually you went to live with</p> <p>7 your mum in [REDACTED] --</p> <p>8 A. Yes.</p> <p>9 Q. -- in 1972.</p> <p>10 A. Yes.</p> <p>11 Q. The Inquiry will be able -- the Panel will be able to</p> <p>12 look at the documents that relate to that period, and</p> <p>13 unfortunately there was difficulty in [REDACTED] and --</p> <p>14 A. Yes, because Social Services once again slipped up, and</p> <p>15 they did not go to [REDACTED] They brought -- in fact,</p> <p>16 St. Louis nuns, I loved them. When I went there with</p> <p>17 the Welfare, I was in tears, because nobody told me from</p> <p>18 one place to another no matter where I went, no matter</p> <p>19 which children's home -- I was picked up; it was always</p> <p>20 Miss Black and a guy; it was always a Volkswagen</p> <p>21 I remember -- but nobody ever told me where I was going.</p> <p>22 I was just ready and marched off to the front corridor</p> <p>23 and out the door and put in a car and I had to sit in</p> <p>24 this car. I thought I was going miles and miles.</p> <p>25 I didn't know where I was going, you know.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Page 31</p>
<p>1 family that I loved and I never stopped loving, even my</p> <p>2 mother and father, and even till today I was never angry</p> <p>3 with anybody. I just loved them and I wanted to be</p> <p>4 loved.</p> <p>5 Q. And eventually your difficulty resulted in a Place of</p> <p>6 Safety Order being made where --</p> <p>7 A. Yes, because I had a girl bullying me in a school in</p> <p>8 Newry, and I said to her that -- I don't care who hears</p> <p>9 me, but this is what happened. She was bullying me so</p> <p>10 much and I said to her, "I'll get the IRA on you". Do</p> <p>11 you understand? Then two Special Branch came into the</p> <p>12 school to ask me questions and ask me how did I know</p> <p>13 about the IRA and such and such, and I think it was</p> <p>14 their recommendation that I was sent to Middletown, you</p> <p>15 know.</p> <p>16 Q. Well, if we look at SND-4517, we can see the Place of</p> <p>17 Safety Order that is being made by the Justice of the</p> <p>18 Peace, and a Training School Order is then made in April</p> <p>19 of 1971. That's at SND-4518. You go then to live with</p> <p>20 the Sisters of St. Louis in St. Joseph's Training School</p> <p>21 in Middletown.</p> <p>22 A. Yes.</p> <p>23 Q. There are various documents that the Inquiry Panel can</p> <p>24 read about assessments that were made about how you were</p> <p>25 finding things while you were there.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Page 30</p>	<p>1 The point is I blame the Social Services for this,</p> <p>2 because nobody checked my mother out. My mother was</p> <p>3 an alcoholic. They took -- they invited my mother to</p> <p>4 come and stay in Middletown, which was very gracious and</p> <p>5 kind of Middletown, especially the St. Louis nuns, and</p> <p>6 I was able to share a wee room to get to know her,</p> <p>7 because I hadn't known her for years, and we got on</p> <p>8 well, but each night we were going down to the village</p> <p>9 in Middletown and my mammy was getting her wee half</p> <p>10 bottle of whisky, you know, but because you were so</p> <p>11 happy to have a mammy -- and I loved her and I still do</p> <p>12 today -- and you wouldn't have dreamt of telling on your</p> <p>13 mammy that your mammy's drinking, and I just loved her.</p> <p>14 I just loved being able to have a mammy and hug a mammy,</p> <p>15 and I went to -- anyway mammy went back and she promised</p> <p>16 me that, "I'll take you out". I said, "Mammy, please".</p> <p>17 I just wanted to be -- have a mammy, to have a home</p> <p>18 again, because I was very happy in [REDACTED] with her.</p> <p>19 My parents -- fair play to them -- they never --</p> <p>20 they never disturbed their child -- children mentally,</p> <p>21 because I always thought my mammy and daddy was the</p> <p>22 happiest mammy and daddy in the world, because they</p> <p>23 never argued. I never heard them argue. If they</p> <p>24 argued, they done it somewhere else; maybe when we were</p> <p>25 in school, you know. So that was good care towards us.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Page 32</p>

PRIVATE

26.

27.

28.

29.

St Josephs Middletown (1972-1974)

30. When I left Good Sheperd I went to St Josephs and I was so happy there. There was a lovely nun called SR240 she was so nice and made you feel that you mattered. You were made feel like you were wanted and were treated with warmth and affection which I had never experienced before.

31. I was never in trouble with the police before being sent to Middletown and I stayed there until I was [REDACTED]

PRIVATE

was asked about why I ran away, I always just told lies. My sister **NHB 9** would run away from the Good Shepherd and come over and get me and the two of us would go on the run together. We were always caught and brought back.

SR 31 would stand chatting nicely to the police, and as soon as they left, she would grab me and start beating me, and again I would be told to kneel and pray outside her cell all night.

20. On one occasion, when I was aged about fourteen or fifteen years, my sister **NHB 9** ran away from Middletown and came to see me in Nazareth House. We ran away together, and made it to Armagh, where we stayed with a friend of **NHB 9** for a few days. This girl's mother however rang the police and said that we had broken into the electric meter in her home, even though it wasn't us. We were arrested and kept in Armagh police station until a Social Worker arrived. They were going to take me back to Nazareth House but I begged them not to. I told them that if they took me back there, I would just keep running away. The Social Worker had to take me to Court in Belfast to get a Court Order stating that I was to go to Middletown.

St Joseph's Training School, Middletown, Co. Armagh, 1977 - 1979

21. I loved it in Middletown. The nuns were brilliant. By the time I arrived **NHB 9** and **NHB 8** had left. The staff members were so good to us. I still keep in contact with them. Whilst I was in Middletown I went to school onsite.

22. Brendan Smyth came to visit me in Middletown and it hit me that he had followed me there. I was older at the time, and I asked a staff member, **SJM 5** **SJM 5**, to stay in the room with me. I refused to speak to him the whole time, so **SJM 5** did all the talking. He gave me five pounds and a bag of sweets and left. I told **SJM 5** that he scares me. **SJM 5** was surprised that I didn't want to see this man since I never had any visitors. She rang **SJM 11** and told her that a priest, Brendan Smyth, had come to see me but that I didn't want to see him. **SJM 11** told him not to come to the convent again. She ran out to his car, chased him and said "don't you dare come up here again, you're not welcome here". Brendan Smyth had previously visited both

OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL

SJM-1301

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN.

We visited this school on 20th December, 1950, for the purpose of the annual inspection. On that date there were in residence 57 girls (25 junior, 6 senior, and 6 voluntary cases). Details of admissions and discharges during the year are as follows:- Three were discharged during the year, 2 junior and 1 senior. The senior girl who was discharged on appeal was readmitted after a few months.

General Health of the Pupils.

The general health of the girls was well maintained during the year and there were no serious outbreaks of illness. We were glad to see that [redacted], the child referred to in last year's Report as suffering from tuberculous glands, has completely recovered although still under observation by the County Tuberculosis Officer who sees her from time to time. We also saw HIA 178 [redacted] who is suffering from paralysis of the muscles of the right wrist and hand as the result of a birth injury. We understand that the Orthopaedic Surgeon, Mr. Martin, has given it as his opinion that the only treatment for this condition is to encourage the child to use the hand. In the circumstances, we think a written report should be obtained from the Orthopaedic Surgeon. One child was seen in bed in the sick-room. She was suffering from a mild pharyngitis. None of the other children was sick on the day of our visit. The general medical arrangements at the school remain as described in last year's Report. As all the children attend the Primary School situated in the grounds all are eligible for the benefits of the school medical and dental services. The ascertainment of educationally sub-normal and ineducable children does not, therefore, constitute the problem which it does in some of the other training schools. We would refer here to our recommendation on medical records and uniform medical cards for training schools made in our report on St. Patrick's Training School.

omitted from
copy sent to
the Manager.
3/4/51

Buildings and Equipment.

Buildings and equipment are well maintained. The dormitories and workroom are neat and clean. Beds, bedding and bed-clothes are clean and comfortable. New beds of a better quality have been obtained during the year. Work is proceeding on the enlargement of the bathroom adjacent to the Sacred Heart Dormitory. The completion of this work has been delayed by lack of materials. We understand everything necessary has now been obtained, except the glazed floor channels, but it is hoped that these will be available soon. When this work is completed ablutionary and sanitary facilities in the school should prove adequate. The kitchen accommodation is satisfactory and the stainless steel sink in the scullery annexe is a big improvement. We understand that an electric cooker is proposed as a boost to the Esse cooker. The dining-room was clean and tidy at the time of the visit. The Laundry was also inspected. Four senior girls were engaged in ironing at the time of our visit. The old-fashioned equipment remains but we understand that plans are nearing completion with the Electricity Authority to provide up-to-date electrical equipment. In this connection we recommend that the type of equipment to be provided should be the subject of very careful consideration as we understand there is a proposal to provide equipment suitable for a large electric laundry. In our opinion it is doubtful if the expense of providing such elaborate equipment could be justified for the small number of girls to be trained. The entire main convent building has been re-wired according to Electricity Board specification.

The concrete path in front of the school has not been repaired. The main drive is not as yet seriously defective in our opinion although there are numerous pot-holes.

The building alterations and repairs and electrical installations are to be made the subject of a separate detailed report when we have visited with Mr. Wright, Architect, Ministry of Health and Local Government. It has not been possible for Mr. Wright to visit with us to date owing to pressure of work.

Diet.

A varied diet is provided and menus are available for inspection.

COPY

MUSGRAVE PARK HOSPITAL,

Balmoral,
Belfast.

19th March, 1951

REPORT

This child has had Obstetrical Paralysis of the right arm which has left some deformity of the right elbow. She has been seen on the 25th October, 1950, at the Orthopaedic Clinic at Armagh, also previously on the 4.5.49 and 3.8.49, in the past 2 years but it is regretted that little effective can be done or can be achieved in the future.

DIAGNOSIS: Klumpke's Paralysis

PRIVATE

14. We were given our dinner at 12.30pm and then we went back to school. After school we had to clean as well. We had to wash the floors and then put wax on them to shine them. It was hard to shine the floor without leaving scuff marks. We had to clean all the bathrooms, the sinks, everything. I remember being made to clean from a very young age, possibly 4 or 5.
15. We did not get enough to eat and I often went to bed hungry. Years later, when I was in my thirties, I remember running into a woman, **SJM38** in Middletown who went to school with us. She lived in the town and she said to me, 'God, I used to feel awful sorry for you, children, you looked as if you were starved'. We usually had porridge for breakfast or occasionally an egg. Then potatoes, cabbage and vegetables for dinner and a slice of bread and butter with cocoa for supper. The clothes we were given were provided by the De La Salle Order and although they were second hand, they were lovely clothes. We wore a white blouse, a tie and a navy skirt for school. The clothes were always clean and we were always told to wash ourselves. Our hair was also cut if it was too long. I was taken for medical appointments for my arm although I know from the papers I received that on occasion, at least one of these appointments was missed. I don't remember ever being told to do specific exercises to massage my hand or the muscles in my arm.
16. **SR237** came to me the day before my 16th birthday and told me I had to leave the convent. I wasn't given any warning and it was a complete shock to me. The nuns arranged a work placement for me at **SR237** factory in Belfast and board and lodging with an elderly couple. I was very young and it was all too overwhelming for me to adjust to in such a short time; Belfast seemed as strange as America to me then. I didn't know how to get around. I remember getting on buses and getting lost. I just cried my eyes out the whole of that first night and I ended up going back to Middletown the next day. The convent was a harsh environment but it was also my home. I wanted to be around familiar things and the girls I knew there.
17. I left Belfast the next day and came back to Middletown for a day or two but I wasn't allowed to stay. **SR237** organised a place for me in a hostel in

1 "

2

3 . She has been seen on 25th October 1950 at the
4 Orthopaedic Clinic at Armagh, also previously on 4th May
5 '49 and 3rd August '49 in the past two years, but it is
6 regretted that little effective can be done or can be
7 achieved in the future."

8 The diagnosis is given there, as you've said in your
9 statement, as . So it looks as
10 though certainly when you were a young child, there were
11 some efforts made to try to correct your disability.

12 A. Uh-huh. Yes.

13 Q. Just going back to paragraph 10, if we may, which is on
14 page 335, you were saying there that even if you had
15 someone -- you do remember being in hospital when you
16 were very young but can't remember why. Now we came
17 across another document which suggested that you had had
18 to go for a medical appointment and had your head
19 shaved. You thought you might have gone for treatment
20 for ringworm or something like that.

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. It might have been that that you are remembering, but
23 you said even if you had someone to complain to, no-one
24 would have believed you at that time, because people
25 were inclined to trust the Sisters. You remember

and prior to her death she lived in a nursing home in Monaghan. She had mobility issues and for three to four years prior to her death was virtually housebound.

21. In relation to paragraph 10, HIA 178 states that she recalls going to the dentist but has no recollection of going to see a doctor. There was a regular system of health care appointments in St Joseph's. As stated above, we had an infirmary and any girl in need of medical care would have been taken immediately to the infirmary. Sister SR 242 was the nurse in the infirmary. There was another nurse in the infirmary in the 1950's. I believe her name was Sister SR 266. Every fortnight, a local GP, Dr McElroy visited St Joseph's. Dr McElroy also routinely examined every girl every quarter. HIA 178's personal records also confirm that she went to a number of medical appointments at Musgrave Park Hospital and the Royal Belfast Hospital for Sick Children in 1949, 1950 and 1951 to treat her right arm and right elbow. HIA 178 is correct that the dentist also called regularly to examine and treat any dental issues. The medical and dental care is referred to in the inspection records.
22. I have no recollection of a SJM 36 referred to in paragraph 10 of HIA 178 HIA 178 statement.
23. In relation to paragraph 11, HIA 178 recalls that there was a different regime implemented when the statutory inspectors arrived. She states that they were given better clothes to wear and she has no recollection as to the duration of the inspection. The records confirm that the orphanage was inspected at least once a year. I do not accept that the girls were given different clothes for the inspectors arriving. I was never aware of any fresh or new clothing being stored up for visits by officials. I do recall the girls receiving new clothes on quite a regular basis and this is confirmed in numerous inspection reports. For example, I remember as part of my sewing class that older girls made their own outfits for Christmas and Sister SR 237 provided all the material required to make the clothes.
24. I also note at paragraph 11, the positive memories in relation to birthdays, Christmas and trips out. I also remember treats being given out every Sunday. Given the passage of time I cannot remember specifically what presents were given at Christmas or birthdays. I believe the children were taken quite regularly to the Castle Leslie Estate in Monaghan and also to Glenariff every summer for two weeks holiday.
25. I cannot comment specifically in relation to paragraph 12 of HIA 178's statement other than to say that SJM 37's family lived in the village and they owned a pub

PRIVATE

14. I went to school every weekday from the ages of 4 until I left at 16 but I didn't learn anything. The teachers I remember were SR250 and SR249 SR249. There were no lay teachers at the school. Both these nuns beat me when I couldn't pronounce my words. I kept getting my letters and my words confused, for example, instead of "God bless you", I wrote "God blast you". They beat me for that mistake but I can't remember who beat me. I still can't read or write. The nuns did not help me to learn. They just left me at the back of the classroom. We were taught with the children from the town and although the nuns beat us, they did not beat those children.
15. I vaguely remember being ill and being left by myself in bed in my dormitory. I don't remember being taken to a doctor or getting any medicine on this occasion. I don't remember a nurse in the convent or a sick bay. I broke my arm once when was about 15. I was at school and I was leaning back in my chair and fell over. The nuns did take me to hospital in [REDACTED] and I was there for one ~~or two~~ days. *My arm was set in plaster of paris.* [REDACTED]
16. The nuns took us on holiday every year to [REDACTED]. We would go there as a group. I also remember having to cook and clean while we were there.
17. On one occasion Inspectors from Stormont came to look around the convent. I was about 9 or 10. They asked me 'Who made the Hail Mary?' I told them 'St Joseph'. I was beaten for saying this after they left. I remember that day I was waiting with the other girls in the refectory near a table where some meals were laid out. We ate them as we thought this food was for us but it was for the nuns. We got a terrible beating because of this but at least we did not go to bed hungry that day. We didn't get stars/marks for good behaviour for a while after that.
18. My father visited us at least every month for the whole time I was in the convent. He came on his bicycle from [REDACTED] to Armagh. My mother, my [REDACTED] and my half sister, [REDACTED] came to visit as well from time to time. We were not allowed to say hello or hug our visitors. We were taken in one at a time to see my parents; the nuns did not allow us to spend time

Copy for W.74.

Original on W.1903.

Gynan,

Co. Armagh.

2nd May, 1947.

This is to certify that I examined

HIA 249

HIA 249

, an inmate of St. Joseph's Industrial School, Middleton, and came to the conclusion that she is suffering from Congenital Heart Disease. She is being cared for particularly well in this institution.

(Sgd.) G. T. Gillespie, M.B. Bch., B.A.O.

started but she was there when I came in 1958. There was also an infirmary in St Joseph's so medical assistance would have been available for the girls. In the 1940s and 1950s a GP from Keady came every fortnight and the girls all had a general examination every quarter. In the 1940s the GP was Dr McElroy. In my experience of the time, no girl would ever be left in the infirmary without a Sister being present.

40. HIA 249's personal file confirms that she was admitted to the Royal Victoria Hospital on 11th December 1955. She remained there until 20th December 1955. HIA 249 had a congenital heart defect and this is noted in her admission record. The letter from the Royal Victoria Hospital confirms HIA 249 was admitted for observation due to her congenital heart (known as maladie de roger). Letters in her file suggest that after discharge on 20th December 1955, further medical reports were sent from the Royal Victoria Hospital to St Joseph's Middletown. This is not consistent with HIA 249's recollection that she was not taken to the doctor, given medicine or having been left on her own in bed. I attach the extracts from HIA 249's file which I have marked 'BD10'.
41. In paragraph 16 (SJM-071) HIA 249 states that the nuns took the girls every year on holiday to Glenariff. This is correct. Sister SR 237 rented a house in Glenariff. I never attended the holiday home in Glenariff so I cannot comment on whether, or not, girls were required to cook and clean while they were there although I do anticipate they probably were required to perform some chores.
42. Inspectors did attend St Joseph's at least once per year from as early as 1920s. An annual inspection report was produced and the inspectors signed the statutory books including the punishment book.
43. In paragraph 17 (SJM-071) HIA 249 refers to an incident which occurred when the orphanage was being inspected. HIA 249 states that meals were laid out on the table in the dining room and that she was beaten because she thought the food was for the children but it was for the nuns. The nuns never ate in the same dining room as the children. They ate in the convent. Even the nuns who lived in the dormitories with the girls would have eaten in the convent. HIA 249 states that she did not get any stars/ marks for good behaviour following that inspection. However, to the best of my recollection a marks system/star system was not introduced in St Joseph's until the early 1970s when SR 240 was the Director of St Joseph's. If HIA 249 was beaten for this incident then I accept that it should not have happened and I apologise for it.

1 Q. Your recollection is you were in bed for three weeks.

2 A. I was.

3 Q. And left completely on your own when everyone went out
4 for the day. Now when I was discussing that with you,
5 you pointed out to me there probably was a nun still
6 there.

7 A. There probably was more than likely a nun there, but not
8 that I really seen much of them. You know, she was just
9 bringing me something to eat and then going and that was
10 it.

11 Q. Yes.

12 A. I was terrified because I was ill on my own.

13 Q. Yes. So the impression that this creates you were
14 literally -- no-one else in St. Joseph's, Middletown.

15 A. Well, not that I really seen. You know what I mean?

16 Q. SR240 on behalf of the Sisters of St. Louis has
17 explained to the Inquiry, if we look at their
18 paragraph 14, please, at 700, that she checked your
19 personal file and there is no record of ill health
20 recorded in it. The nursing records unfortunately don't
21 date from before 1971, but the daily diary does cover
22 the period from '64 to '67 and the daily diary, as
23 I said to you -- I think we saw an example of it when we
24 were looking at the page --

25 A. Right.

PRIVATE

yourself **HIA176** The girls eventually owned up and got a terrible beating. I also remember trips to **[REDACTED]** in September. We would have put on Christmas plays in Middletown for the staff and the girl's parents but my parents never came as Middletown was so far away. I had my sister there but we were separated and it was very isolating.

19. One of the girls called **SJM78** lived in my house. I remember on one occasion, she stole glue. She was a glue sniffer. **SR240** came into the classroom and pulled her out. We could see **SR240**'s office from our classroom. We heard screaming coming from her office and we could see her being beaten through the window. She used her hands to hit her.
20. I do not remember **SR240** having any favourite girls or ever showing any affection to anyone. We only ever saw **SR240** or **SR244** if there was a problem that they had to deal with.
21. **SR244** would have dished out the beatings in House 2. I witnessed her hit a Belfast girl called **SJM50**.
22. I went home at weekends sometimes with my twin sister. We were put on a bus and sent home. My mother and step-father were very abusive towards us but we were still sent back to them for weekends and holidays. I remember spending one Easter in Middletown and **SR243** came round with tins of sweets and cigarettes. I never smoked before I went to Middletown. It just seems ludicrous to me that cigarettes were given to me at fourteen years of age by nuns.
23. If we had a medical complaint, we would have seen the nurse, **SJM55**. If it was very serious, she would have made an appointment for you with the Doctor and the Doctor would have come into the school to see you. I remember seeing **SJM55**, the nurse on site, about my chest. She said it was just phlegm and was not concerned about the smoking. I was diagnosed with asthma when I was twenty-seven and I continue to have problems with my chest. I was never taken to the dentist the whole time I was there. It was never explained to me what

Medical complaints

24. HIA 176 is correct in her recollection that if a girl had a medical complaint she would have been seen by the nurse at St Josephs. I can confirm that the nurse employed by St. Joseph's at the time of HIA 176's admission was SJM 55. It is also correct that if the medical issue was considered serious an appointment would have been made for a girl to see the doctor. Dr. Kelly was the local GP who regularly attended St. Joseph's to look after the medical needs of our girls at the time HIA 176 was with us. I have attached marked **BD 10** all the entries which I have been able to locate which relate to HIA 176's medical issues while at St. Joseph's. I would ask the Inquiry to note the number of entries in relation to HIA 176 in particular for routine medical examination, attendances at the opticians for new glasses and attendances with the nurse. (Note the reference to the referral for a chest X-ray). One of the records confirms that HIA 176 was suffering at one point (September 1982) with a tooth abscess. This developed while she was at Runkerry Activity Centre and she received attention there but it was clear from the record of that trip that she had developed a fear of the dentist. I cannot find any entry that confirms that HIA 176 was taken to the dentist but there is certainly an entry to confirm that HIA 176 was seen by Dr. Kelly in relation to the abscess on her tooth on 28th October 1982. An antibiotic was ordered and given. There are many other entries for other girls attending the local dentist and I can only assume that HIA 176 was perhaps frightened of the dentist and did not wish to attend the routine appointments that were made for all girls. I have also attached a copy of the medical record for HIA 176 which is contained within her personal file. This confirms all the records of illnesses and treatment which she received. In relation to HIA 176's comments about the beginning of her menstruation, these issues would have been discussed with staff within her house and most usually the house mother. In addition the girls would have been educated in sex education at school which I believe would have covered this issue. HIA 176 also recalls in paragraph 23 that during her time in Middletown her social worker was SND 466 and he only visited her once or

Medical complaints

24. HIA 176 is correct in her recollection that if a girl had a medical complaint she would have been seen by the nurse at St Josephs. I can confirm that the nurse employed by St. Joseph's at the time of HIA 176's admission was SJM 55. It is also correct that if the medical issue was considered serious an appointment would have been made for a girl to see the doctor. Dr. Kelly was the local GP who regularly attended St. Joseph's to look after the medical needs of our girls at the time HIA 176 was with us. I have attached marked **BD 10** all the entries which I have been able to locate which relate to HIA 176's medical issues while at St. Joseph's. I would ask the Inquiry to note the number of entries in relation to HIA 176 in particular for routine medical examination, attendances at the opticians for new glasses and attendances with the nurse. (Note the reference to the referral for a chest X-ray). One of the records confirms that HIA 176 was suffering at one point (September 1982) with a tooth abscess. This developed while she was at Runkerry Activity Centre and she received attention there but it was clear from the record of that trip that she had developed a fear of the dentist. I cannot find any entry that confirms that HIA 176 was taken to the dentist but there is certainly an entry to confirm that HIA 176 was seen by Dr. Kelly in relation to the abscess on her tooth on 28th October 1982. An antibiotic was ordered and given. There are many other entries for other girls attending the local dentist and I can only assume that HIA 176 was perhaps frightened of the dentist and did not wish to attend the routine appointments that were made for all girls. I have also attached a copy of the medical record for HIA 176 which is contained within her personal file. This confirms all the records of illnesses and treatment which she received. In relation to HIA 176's comments about the beginning of her menstruation, these issues would have been discussed with staff within her house and most usually the house mother. In addition the girls would have been educated in sex education at school which I believe would have covered this issue. HIA 176 also recalls in paragraph 23 that during her time in Middletown her social worker was SND 466 and he only visited her once or

Medical complaints

24. HIA 176 is correct in her recollection that if a girl had a medical complaint she would have been seen by the nurse at St Josephs. I can confirm that the nurse employed by St. Joseph's at the time of HIA 176's admission was SJM 55. It is also correct that if the medical issue was considered serious an appointment would have been made for a girl to see the doctor. Dr. Kelly was the local GP who regularly attended St. Joseph's to look after the medical needs of our girls at the time HIA 176 was with us. I have attached marked **BD 10** all the entries which I have been able to locate which relate to HIA 176's medical issues while at St. Joseph's. I would ask the Inquiry to note the number of entries in relation to HIA 176 in particular for routine medical examination, attendances at the opticians for new glasses and attendances with the nurse. (Note the reference to the referral for a chest X-ray). One of the records confirms that HIA 176 was suffering at one point (September 1982) with a tooth abscess. This developed while she was at Runkerry Activity Centre and she received attention there but it was clear from the record of that trip that she had developed a fear of the dentist. I cannot find any entry that confirms that HIA 176 was taken to the dentist but there is certainly an entry to confirm that HIA 176 was seen by Dr. Kelly in relation to the abscess on her tooth on 28th October 1982. An antibiotic was ordered and given. There are many other entries for other girls attending the local dentist and I can only assume that HIA 176 was perhaps frightened of the dentist and did not wish to attend the routine appointments that were made for all girls. I have also attached a copy of the medical record for HIA 176 which is contained within her personal file. This confirms all the records of illnesses and treatment which she received. In relation to HIA 176's comments about the beginning of her menstruation, these issues would have been discussed with staff within her house and most usually the house mother. In addition the girls would have been educated in sex education at school which I believe would have covered this issue. HIA 176 also recalls in paragraph 23 that during her time in Middletown her social worker was SND 466 and he only visited her once or

15. HEALTH AND SAFETY REQUIREMENTS

- 15.1 The Management Board has provided a policy statement in compliance with the Health and Safety at Work (Northern Ireland) Order 1978 with the directive that all staff must conform to the Board's policy and carry out their responsibilities in this respect. The Director is responsible for the effective arrangements for health and safety within the school. A Health and Safety Committee has been established to review and update policy. In practical terms the responsibility for oversight of the day to day health and safety requirements are delegated to the Teacher Leader for the school complex, the Senior Residential Social Worker in each of the house units, the Nurse for the medical unit, Swimming Pool Attendant for the pool and the Cook for the kitchen.

Fire Safety and Drills

- 15.2 The fire equipment was last checked by the Fire Protection Agency on 31.3.93. R Taylor Services Ltd checked the fire alarm system on 27.5.93 and found the system to be working satisfactorily. No recent Fire Clearance Certificate was available as the issuing body were awaiting completion of the major rewiring operation in the swimming pool and games hall before a certificate could be issued.

Health Care Arrangements

Medical

- 15.3 Dr Kelly, a general practitioner from Keady, provides medical cover to the school. He visits weekly on Thursdays and his practice provides an on-call services at all times. The young people are medically examined by the nurse upon arrival in the school and the medical officer gives them a full examination on his first visit following their admission.

Dental Care

- 15.4 The school has the services of a dentist in Armagh City. Each girl has an initial examination after admission. Treatment is provided on a need basis. All the young people have regular dental check-ups at 6-monthly intervals.

Nursing Care

- 15.5 The school has the services of a full-time nurse who usually works between 1.00-8.00 pm Monday-Thursday and 1.00-6.00 pm on Fridays. She maintains the medical records, provides medical cover for the young people and arranges appointments at the dentist and outpatient clinics. The medical room is located in the unit between houses 1 and 2 and the presence of the nurse in the building ensures that someone is always available during the afternoon period when most residential staff are off duty and whilst the young people are at school.

1 the dormitories. Then you had breakfast, usually
2 porridge. You went to school about 9.00, had lessons
3 with the day girls, who came in from the town. One of
4 them was the girl who bought you the rollers for
5 a present.

6 A. That's right.

7 Q. But you were not allowed to talk to them --

8 A. That's right.

9 Q. -- but you did do so.

10 A. I did.

11 Q. You remember lessons in English and maths but don't
12 remember learning anything. You don't feel that you got
13 an adequate education. You couldn't concentrate on
14 anything, because you just wanted to get out of there.
15 You say you were made to sit at the back of the class
16 and more or less taught yourself to read.

17 A. That's right.

18 Q. You say although there were some nuns who were kind to
19 you, overall they used to make you feel as if you were
20 not good for anything. In those days there wasn't a
21 split between primary and secondary schools and there
22 was a sort of extended primary education until you were
23 16 and there was an expectation that after 16 you went
24 out to work.

25 If we can scroll down, please, you were given dinner

1 at 12.30 and then went back to school. After school you
2 had to clean as well.

3 "We had to wash the floors and put wax on them and
4 shine them, but it was hard to shine the floor without
5 leaving scuff marks. We had to clean all the bathrooms
6 and sinks, everything. I remember being made to clean
7 from a very young age, possibly 4 or 5."

8 A. That's right.

9 Q. Now the congregation have said yes, girls did do chores
10 in the home, as they would have done in a family home,
11 but they were given age-appropriate chores. Do you
12 think the things --

13 A. No.

14 Q. -- you were asked to do were appropriate for the age
15 that you had at the time?

16 A. No, definitely not.

17 Q. Your records show that you did very well at typewriting
18 and at elocution. I was asking if you remembered that.
19 There are certificates in the papers --

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. -- that show you did well in those subjects. Do you
22 remember that, HIA178?

23 A. No, I don't.

24 Q. Paragraph 15 here you say:

25 "We did not get enough to eat and I often went to

PRIVATE

14. I went to school every weekday from the ages of 4 until I left at 16 but I didn't learn anything. The teachers I remember were SR250 and SR249 SR249. There were no lay teachers at the school. Both these nuns beat me when I couldn't pronounce my words. I kept getting my letters and my words confused, for example, instead of "God bless you", I wrote "God blast you". They beat me for that mistake but I can't remember who beat me. I still can't read or write. The nuns did not help me to learn. They just left me at the back of the classroom. We were taught with the children from the town and although the nuns beat us, they did not beat those children.
15. I vaguely remember being ill and being left by myself in bed in my dormitory. I don't remember being taken to a doctor or getting any medicine on this occasion. I don't remember a nurse in the convent or a sick bay. I broke my arm once when was about 15. I was at school and I was leaning back in my chair and fell over. The nuns did take me to hospital in [REDACTED] and I was there for one ~~or two~~ days. *My arm was set in plaster of paris.* [REDACTED]
16. The nuns took us on holiday every year to [REDACTED]. We would go there as a group. I also remember having to cook and clean while we were there.
17. On one occasion Inspectors from Stormont came to look around the convent. I was about 9 or 10. They asked me 'Who made the Hail Mary?' I told them 'St Joseph'. I was beaten for saying this after they left. I remember that day I was waiting with the other girls in the refectory near a table where some meals were laid out. We ate them as we thought this food was for us but it was for the nuns. We got a terrible beating because of this but at least we did not go to bed hungry that day. We didn't get stars/marks for good behaviour for a while after that.
18. My father visited us at least every month for the whole time I was in the convent. He came on his bicycle from [REDACTED] to Armagh. My mother, my [REDACTED] and my half sister, [REDACTED] came to visit as well from time to time. We were not allowed to say hello or hug our visitors. We were taken in one at a time to see my parents; the nuns did not allow us to spend time

1 Q. You felt she always singled you out and treated you
2 worse than the other children.

3 A. That's right.

4 Q. Just to confirm the music was a big part of life in
5 St. Joseph's.

6 A. Yes. Well, I love music anyway. It is my life, music.

7 Q. And Irish dancing was something that we have heard --

8 A. Yes. There was that, yes.

9 Q. -- was a feature.

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. There was an Irish dancer came every week.

12 A. Yes.

13 Q. Those were good memories you have of your time there.

14 A. Yes.

15 Q. Isn't that right?

16 A. Oh, yes, yes.

17 Q. I know you are upset in remembering what we have been
18 talking about, but there were times that were good when
19 we were talking --

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. -- you remember, and you talk about this a little in
22 paragraph 11, about Christmas and birthdays and --

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. -- visits to Castle Leslie and holidays in Glenariff,
25 which was all good.

PRIVATE

arts and crafts. In her class, we just made gollywogs or knitted. As a treat, she would reward you with cigarettes. [SJM46] was the maths teacher. Her idea of teaching maths was to play bingo and we would get cigarettes for a line or a full house. [SJM47] taught cookery but if you didn't want to cook you could watch two films instead. We watched the same two films, 'One flew over the cuckoo's nest' and 'Calamity Jane', for the two years I was there. [SJM48] was the music teacher but we would just sing songs in her class and [SR259] taught PE. The only male member of staff was the priest. I think he was called [SJM49]. We only ever saw him on a Sunday. He was a horrible man. I remember he smacked a girl called [SJM50] on the face when she went up to receive the Sacrament because she wore red lipstick in the chapel. He was a small man and I remember he was old.

17. We did not wear a uniform. There was a local clothes store where we went to get our clothes. There was no choice and we had to take what we were given. Everybody wore corduroy skirts and sweatshirts. I remember we were taken to [redacted] for our shoes. We all wore desert boots. I made friends with the other girls from Derry. We stuck together. There was [SJM51], [SJM16], [SJM12] and my twin sister [HIA376], [SJM16] and [SJM12] are dead now. [SJM51] lives in Derry. I am no longer in contact with her. We would all comfort each other. I remember we came back from Church one day and [SR260] broke a brush over [SJM52]'s back. We had been carrying on the night before, just probably chatting and one of the residential workers, [redacted], had spoken to [SR260]. [SR260] was waiting at the door and [SJM52] was the first through the door and was punished. I thanked God that I had not walked through the door first that day.

18. We were taken to a retreat once in Milford House in Armagh. A few of the girls from Belfast broke in to the retreat house and stole some altar wine. We were all lined up by [SR240] and she said she would beat us all until she found out who stole the wine. [SR240] was the anti-Christ. She always carried round a bunch of keys because everywhere she went she was always unlocking the doors. She would have come up behind you with a bunch of keys in her hand and dug her knuckle into your back and say things like, 'Are you behaving

which I have attached to this witness statement are copies of those which we have found which are relevant to [HIA 176]'s time in St. Joseph's.

16. In relation to paragraph 16, [HIA 176] describes the education she received at St. Joseph's. We did have four external qualified teachers at St. Joseph's during the time [HIA 176] was with us. I cannot comment on the specific allegations which [HIA 176] makes about individual teachers. I have attached to this witness statement a copy of the annual education report for the year 1984 – 1985 which confirms the educational results for the school marked **BD 6**. I don't believe we had any male teachers or male house staff during [HIA 176]'s time however we did have a male swimming pool attendant for St. Joseph's swimming pool and another part-time male member of staff who provided entertainment for the girls including discos and bingo. [HIA 176] refers to a priest who she describes as "a horrible man". I don't recall a priest called Father [SJM 49]. There would have been a number of different priests celebrating Mass at the Convent during [HIA 176]'s period of residence. I have no knowledge of any incident which involved a priest smacking a girl called [SJM 50]. [SJM 50] was a resident at St. Joseph's between 6th January 1982 and 20th January 1982. We have no record of a complaint they made to St. Joseph's about a slapping incident involving [SJM 50] and a priest.

17. The girls in St. Joseph's wore casual clothing during weekdays. Most wore something more stylish or special on Sundays or when going on outings. A clothing allowance of (I believe £45) was available from the NIO to purchase clothing for a girl who had been admitted to St Josephs. Thereafter cash was made available three times a year for replacing clothing. Girls who spent Christmas and Easter at St. Joseph's got new clothing at this time. Also new clothes would have been purchased for a girl who was attending a special occasion such as a wedding, christening or first holy communion. In 1987 an inspection report noted that "when clothes are being

PRIVATE

St. Joseph's Training School, Middletown, Armagh (1976/1977)

25. I got my eyes opened in Middletown. Some of the girls there had killed people. There were actually a couple of girls I knew from Nazareth House there.
26. Middletown was one of the happiest times of my life. They took us as a group to the shops and they had lots of different classes you could take like tapestry. The members of staff there were very good and I have no complaints at all about my time there. I was only there for about five or six weeks and then I went home. I don't think I ever went to court.
27. I went back to school in [REDACTED] then and completed my O Levels.
28. My adoptive mother killed herself when I was sixteen. She went out into the well in the garden and drowned herself. She was only 48 years old. I used to blame myself for it. I thought maybe if they hadn't adopted me she'd still be alive. My adoptive father never lived a life after that and died of a massive coronary when I was twenty-four. We always said he died of a broken heart. Then it was just me.
29. After that I went to Antrim to study nursing and I lived in nurses' accommodation. That wasn't unlike Nazareth House except there was a good atmosphere. I got on well with the other girls even though I was the only one who didn't drink. I've never touched a drop of alcohol. I've worked as a nurse all my life up until I had spinal surgery recently.
30. I met my first husband [REDACTED] and had my son [REDACTED] when I was twenty. My first husband was an alcoholic and he used to beat me. He was a police officer but he was put out of the police. We split up when my son was five. [REDACTED] is 32 now and I have a great relationship with him. He has his own business and has done well for himself. I also have a daughter from my second marriage called [REDACTED] she is 22. I've been married to my second

sending them to their room. I never witnessed the Sisters slapping, beating or hurting any of the girls.

11. I was put in the lock up once because of fighting with the other girls. The door was not locked. There was a member of staff with me at all times. It was a good place to calm down. I remember being given magazines and puzzles when I was there.

12. I ran away a few times. I had no need to do it as I got out often but the other girls put me up to it. It was just to prove a point. That was the only reason why I did it. Any time I ran away the Police brought me back. I would have gone back into the house and SR 240 would have given off to me and told me not to do it again. I might have been denied a cigarette or lost points but that was it.

13. We were allowed to smoke in St. Joseph's. We were given five cigarettes per day split up between the 12 hours. We got our last cigarette at 9pm at night. Unless our parents gave permission for us to smoke, we weren't allowed to. I already smoked before I went to St. Joseph's and my parents give permission for me to continue to smoke. We were not encouraged to smoke by the Sisters. Once our cigarettes ran out that was it. We bought cigarettes with our pocket money. We were not given any more once they ran out. All the other girls smoked.

14. I never had any problems with the Sisters. The only issues I had were with the other girls. When I had a problem I went to my key worker [REDACTED]

15. I remember SR 240 SR 234 SJM 2 and [REDACTED] They were all very good to me. They had a lot to listen to. It was very stressful for them but they never hurt anyone. I loved my time at St. Joseph's. I think it made me a better person. I was expelled from secondary school and couldn't read or write. I went to school at St. Joseph's and learned to read and write. There were small classes so it was easier to learn. It was an enjoyable experience.

11. EDUCATION/VOCATIONAL TRAINING

- 11.1 A Teacher Leader and 4 teachers are responsible for the provision of education at St Joseph's. The Teacher Leader is directly responsible to the Director for the day to day management of the school programme.
- 11.2 Twenty-nine children were receiving education on site in the school, one was attending a secondary school and one was in training/employment.
- 11.3 The domestic science department has been completely refurbished and a new science block has been developed from an old disused laundry building. The overall refurbishment programme in the school building has been very successful and the end result is a pleasant stimulating environment in which the young people can pursue their studies. In the past 3 years the vast majority of available capital has gone into the educational side of St Joseph's.
- 11.4 A wide range of subjects is available to the young people. The subjects include Art, Craft, Technology, Maths, English, Child Care, Home Economics, Science, Religious Education and Hairdressing. The school is committed to implementing the National Curriculum in as far as it relates to the educational needs of the young people in the school. The educational component of St Joseph's was last inspected by DENI in 1989/90. Although some curriculum changes were identified and equipment shortages were highlighted the Inspectors commented on the good relationship that existed between staff and the girls which undoubtedly led to the promotion of higher levels of self-esteem and self-confidence.
- 11.5 The Social Services Inspectorate would endorse the comments of the DENI in relation to the ethos of the school and the atmosphere that prevailed during this inspection. From observation the Inspectors formed the opinion that a stimulating environment exists where the young people have the opportunity to learn and develop intellectually. From discussion with the teachers and residential social workers it became evident that good working relationships exist between the staff in the school and in the care units. Such a situation is of paramount importance in a setting such as St Joseph's.

11. EDUCATION/VOCATIONAL TRAINING

- 11.1 A Teacher Leader and 4 teachers are responsible for the provision of education at St Joseph's. The Teacher Leader is directly responsible to the Director for the day to day management of the school programme.
- 11.2 Twenty-nine children were receiving education on site in the school, one was attending a secondary school and one was in training/employment.
- 11.3 The domestic science department has been completely refurbished and a new science block has been developed from an old disused laundry building. The overall refurbishment programme in the school building has been very successful and the end result is a pleasant stimulating environment in which the young people can pursue their studies. In the past 3 years the vast majority of available capital has gone into the educational side of St Joseph's.
- 11.4 A wide range of subjects is available to the young people. The subjects include Art, Craft, Technology, Maths, English, Child Care, Home Economics, Science, Religious Education and Hairdressing. The school is committed to implementing the National Curriculum in as far as it relates to the educational needs of the young people in the school. The educational component of St Joseph's was last inspected by DENI in 1989/90. Although some curriculum changes were identified and equipment shortages were highlighted the Inspectors commented on the good relationship that existed between staff and the girls which undoubtedly led to the promotion of higher levels of self-esteem and self-confidence.
- 11.5 The Social Services Inspectorate would endorse the comments of the DENI in relation to the ethos of the school and the atmosphere that prevailed during this inspection. From observation the Inspectors formed the opinion that a stimulating environment exists where the young people have the opportunity to learn and develop intellectually. From discussion with the teachers and residential social workers it became evident that good working relationships exist between the staff in the school and in the care units. Such a situation is of paramount importance in a setting such as St Joseph's.

168. The SSI noted that in the three years prior to their inspection the vast majority of the capital budget had been devoted to improve the educational side of SJM. The school building had been completely refurbished in order to provide a "*pleasant stimulating environment*" and a new science block had been constructed.
169. Moreover, the inspectors took the time to carry out observations from which they concluded that the necessary environment existed within which "*the young people have the opportunity to learn and develop intellectually*" (SJM 1773).
170. These observations were consistent with the output from the school. Following a visit by a member of the SJM Management Board in August 1995, the following report was made of a meeting with a member of the teaching staff:

"We discussed her recent successes in examinations....To May '95 results were as follows:

AEB passes - 327

RSA passes - 43

I understand that a recent visit by a DENI inspector resulted in his request to introduce some of [the teacher's] teaching packages to other schools. Very impressed with [the teacher's] exam results, teaching methods and commitment to her job. Congratulations offered on behalf of the Board" (SJM 24300).

PRIVATE

24. I stayed in Purdysburn for two months and then I was discharged to live with my older brother [REDACTED] who was married. I didn't like this though as [REDACTED] lived round the corner from my parents and his wife was a clean freak. I ended up back in Purdysburn after a few days. I stayed there eleven days and then I went to [REDACTED]. SR 242 [REDACTED] and SR 20 [REDACTED] brought me to [REDACTED]. There was no explanation of where I was going or what was happening to me. I was just taken in the car from Belfast to Armagh. I don't even remember the journey; I don't know if I was still sedated.

St. Joseph's Training School, Middletown, Co. Armagh (31st May 1974 – 1977 approximately)

25. I was sent to [REDACTED] under a court order on 31st May 1974. After six weeks in [REDACTED] I had to go to court and I remember the judge asking me what I wanted to do. My mother was there. There was no way I was going back to the family home where my father was sexually abusing me so I said [REDACTED] because it was a better choice.

26. [REDACTED] was completely different from the rest. The nuns there were from the St Louis order and they didn't wear habits. They got the remnants of Nazareth House and they had to try to fix us. We were so broken by the time we got there. The nuns I remember from [REDACTED] are SR 240 [REDACTED] and SR 257 [REDACTED]. They were both lovely nuns. I remember once SR 240 [REDACTED] put her two hands on my shoulders and I hated it because I hated being touched. She said to me "you cannot be an island; you cannot live without touching". SR 240 [REDACTED] went on to win an OBE for services to adolescents.

27. My biggest fear in [REDACTED] was wetting the bed. When I first arrived they asked me if I wet the bed and I was so embarrassed I said no. When I did wet the bed I didn't know what to do and I was afraid but one of the staff realised and she brought me in new sheets and a rubber sheet. She didn't say a word;

PRIVATE

she just left them at the end of my bed. I thought this was too good to be true and I thought I'd get whacked when I went downstairs but I didn't.

28. One of the staff came to me and said she got up every morning at half seven and if I wanted her to wake me then before everyone else got up she would. That meant I could go and have a shower before everyone else woke up and nobody would know. I couldn't believe how nice she was to me. A couple of years later they were having problems with girls wetting the bed and Sister **SR 240** asked me to talk to them. I didn't want to because it was always such a stigma but I told them I used to wet the bed and none of the girls could believe it.

29. We had housemothers in [REDACTED] and mine was **SR 257**. I really liked her and I opened up to her. She knew me better than anybody and she was a role model for me. I named my first daughter [REDACTED] after the nuns in [REDACTED]. I also got a social worker then called [REDACTED].

30. They put me in charge of the kitchen in [REDACTED] and I remember liking the smell of the food but I wouldn't eat it. I didn't really know I had anorexia at the time and I can't remember how it was dealt with in [REDACTED]. I stayed in [REDACTED] for three years and left in 1977 when I was twenty.

Life after care

31. When I left [REDACTED] I went to work in a [REDACTED]. I think this job was set up by [REDACTED]. I was raped by a local businessman called **NHB 105**. I reported it to the police in [REDACTED] and he got a three year suspended sentence. I later heard he went on to rape another local girl.

32. I then moved to Dublin in 1978 and I got a job housekeeping. That's where I met my husband [REDACTED]. I just married the first man who came along and he was abusive to me. He used to call me fat and smelly and tell me I was no good. He controlled my life and he didn't like me wearing jeans or trousers. I developed a drink problem during my marriage. We were married

1 Q. So she was in charge?

2 A. She was in charge, yes.

3 Q. She was encouraging you to keep an eye on the younger
4 ones.

5 A. Yes, basically, yes.

6 Q. When you say that you got into trouble, it was that you
7 were explaining to me she just would have said, "You
8 were supposed to make them ..."?

9 A. Yes, that's it. You see, if they wouldn't do it and
10 I -- you know, then she would have a go at them and then
11 have a go at me, because she said I should have made
12 them do what she said.

13 Q. Yes. So it wasn't -- it wasn't aggressive ...

14 A. Well, no, not aggressive, but, you know, really
15 shouting, if you understand what I mean.

16 Q. What SR240 has said is if you were continually shouted
17 at -- and that's not her recollection of SR237 --

18 A. Well --

19 Q. -- or how St. Joseph's was run -- but if that is what
20 happened, then she says that was unhelpful. It is not
21 helpful to shout at someone all the time and she doesn't
22 think that's what should have happened.

23 You describe in paragraph 6 then the chores that you
24 were doing and the scrubbing of floors and working in
25 the laundry and the daily regime of going to bed at

1 Q. So she was in charge?

2 A. She was in charge, yes.

3 Q. She was encouraging you to keep an eye on the younger
4 ones.

5 A. Yes, basically, yes.

6 Q. When you say that you got into trouble, it was that you
7 were explaining to me she just would have said, "You
8 were supposed to make them ..."?

9 A. Yes, that's it. You see, if they wouldn't do it and
10 I -- you know, then she would have a go at them and then
11 have a go at me, because she said I should have made
12 them do what she said.

13 Q. Yes. So it wasn't -- it wasn't aggressive ...

14 A. Well, no, not aggressive, but, you know, really
15 shouting, if you understand what I mean.

16 Q. What SR240 has said is if you were continually shouted
17 at -- and that's not her recollection of SR237 --

18 A. Well --

19 Q. -- or how St. Joseph's was run -- but if that is what
20 happened, then she says that was unhelpful. It is not
21 helpful to shout at someone all the time and she doesn't
22 think that's what should have happened.

23 You describe in paragraph 6 then the chores that you
24 were doing and the scrubbing of floors and working in
25 the laundry and the daily regime of going to bed at

1 explaining it to me earlier, after a meal time you would
2 have had to brush and wash the floor --

3 A. Yes.

4 Q. -- of a particular area.

5 A. That's right.

6 Q. So it wasn't -- you weren't scrubbing floors all day,
7 every day.

8 A. No, no. We had to do it like after every meal and then
9 go to work -- in my case work; the rest of them to
10 school.

11 Q. So everybody had a certain chore to do.

12 A. Yes. They had to do, you know, their wee bits of
13 cleaning up and then go to school, but where I had the
14 biggest part of it and then go to work.

15 Q. Your recollection is that bedtime was at 7 o'clock just
16 after your tea.

17 A. Yes, just after -- yes.

18 Q. SR240 said to the Inquiry that bedtime was shortly after
19 9.00. I wonder did you remember a lot of activities
20 that went on?

21 A. No. There was activities, but it was very rare. They
22 maybe brought somebody in to give us a concert or
23 something. We were allowed to stay up late then, but
24 other than that we were in bed.

25 Q. I was discussing with you things like there was a TV in

PRIVATE

3. My dormitory had six or seven girls my own age in it. I moved to bigger dormitories as the years passed. One of them was the Sacred Heart room, with 14 or 15 girls. The whole time I was in the convent my sisters and I were kept separate from each other. We never shared a dormitory and we were not allowed to spend our free time with each other or develop our relationship as sisters. My youngest sister SJM27 was only 11 months old and she was the youngest child in the convent. SR248 took care of her. She was a very good nun and she didn't know how badly the other nuns beat us. The other nuns could see this that SR248 was good to SJM27 and SR249 SR250 SR251 SR252 beat her when she was older because of this.
4. The nuns slept in a cell attached to the dormitory. We were not allowed to talk to each other at night or to leave our beds even to go to the toilet. If I needed to go to the toilet, I would hold it in until the next morning. I don't remember ever wetting the bed. The dormitory doors were always locked at night and to this day I always feel afraid if I am in a room with a closed door at night-time.
5. The first day I was there I was woken up by the nuns and pulled out of bed. We had to kneel on the floor and say prayers. I remember cleaning the floors because I had to go down on my hands and knees to do it. It was hard work. We used a type of wax that looked like candle grease and we had to polish the floors using this. It was hard to get the wax off the floors without leaving marks. I tied cloth to my shoes and slid up and down on the floor in order to polish it. The nuns caught me doing this and beat me. I don't remember which nun beat me.
6. We had to clean the dormitories and do laundry in the mornings. We went to Mass after these chores. I hated going to Mass. The priest was called Father SJM28 and I remember him slapping me on the face on one occasion when I went to take Communion. When we came back from Mass we had to clean the nuns' cells and the chapel. We had our breakfast after these chores at about 8 o'clock in the morning. This was usually porridge or bread and

SJM 27 received are not consistent with HIA 249's memories. I did not witness such punishments in 1958-1959.

20. All the Sisters listed in paragraph 3 of the statement are deceased and Death Certificates (with the exception of SR 251 who is not known to the Louis Order) have been provided to the Inquiry.
21. I understand that SJM 27 has passed away. Prior to her death we were contacted by another of SJM 27 sisters. We were informed that SJM 27 was dying of cancer. It was her wish that as she regarded SR 248 as a mother figure, her ashes should be interred in SR 248's grave in Middletown Convent Cemetery when she died. This request was granted in 2010 before we vacated the Convent.
22. In relation to paragraph 4 (SJM-068) the nuns did sleep in a room next to each dormitory. There was one nun to each dormitory. There were fire escapes out of the dormitories but I would call these sleeping quarters rooms rather than a 'cell'.
23. I cannot comment specifically on the night time routine described in paragraph 4 (SJM-068) before or after 1958 as I never slept in the dormitories. There is no evidence in any of the records to enable me to respond to the allegation that the children were not allowed to talk to each other or leave their beds even to go to the toilet. If this was the regime then I accept that it is not appropriate to forbid children from getting out of bed for a genuine reason such as needing the toilet. Some discipline would be required in relation to talking or ensuring children (particularly young children) were settled in bed and able to sleep. It would be appropriate to have rules which discouraged talking after lights went out.
24. In paragraph 5, (SJM -068) HIA 249 states that she was required to perform a number of cleaning duties. Again, I have no first hand evidence of the regime that was in place between 1947 and 1958 when HIA 249 was a resident. My only memory relates to the period from 1958 to 1959 and with the passage of time that is vague. It is my recollection that the girls did assist with chores but I cannot confirm the exact regime. I also remember that girls put clothes on their feet to help to polish the floors. I find it difficult to accept that the girls were punished for doing this. I recall that this was how the floors were actually cleaned so it was easier to get the wax off the floors using the cloth on your feet.

PRIVATE

the more she would beat me. I quickly learned that I had to behave. SR240

SR240 would tell me that my parents didn't want me and that was why I was in Middletown. She would also tell me that I was dirty. The House Mother from House 1, SJM4 and SJM1 told me to keep my mouth shut and my head down and I would be alright.

7. We received pocket money in Middletown. On a Friday we were allowed to go to the village to spend it. I would have spent my pocket money on cigarettes.
8. There was a record book kept in Middletown which recorded our behaviour during the day. I believe the nuns who looked after us in the evening used this record against us. If we misbehaved during the day the nuns would punish us in the evening.
9. A daily task in Middletown was to clean and dust the dormitory. We would have to get up very early to clean and dust before going to Mass. We would not have had breakfast until we returned from Mass. SR243 who is now deceased would inspect the dormitories. She would wear a white glove and run her finger along an area to check if we had cleaned it correctly. If the room was not to her satisfaction she would wreck it, beat us and make us do it again.
10. On a Saturday we were made to clean all day from 9.00am to 6.00pm with one 5 minute break and a lunch break. My hands would have been red raw from the cleaning. Literally all the furniture of the house had to be taken outside to the garden to allow for cleaning. SR244 used to tell me I was a great cleaner. However, I recall on one occasion there was a tea stain in the sink and SR244 SR244 grabbed me by the ears, dragged me to the sink before slapping me across the head. She told me that I would get no tea until it was spotless. I also recall having to polish the wooden floors. I would turn a carpet tile upside down and slide along the floor to make it shine.
11. Another daily duty in Middletown was kitchen duty. I did not like kitchen duty but I always seemed to be put on kitchen duty. This involved washing and peeling

1 cleaning on a Saturday. You say it happened and lasted
2 all day until your hands were raw. I was explaining to
3 you the congregation have said that's not how they
4 recollect the cleaning taking place. You would have
5 done chores every day. There would have been work on
6 a Saturday morning, but by lunchtime that would have
7 been it. That's not how you remember it.

8 A. No. We only had like hard leather chairs that went
9 round in a corner, maybe ten chairs like this, and every
10 single chair would have been put out into the garden and
11 then all the furniture had to get put out that was able
12 to get put out into the gardens, because of the fact
13 that the floors to be polished, and that -- you know,
14 instead of bringing in what I know now is a buffer
15 machine or a bumper machine, we were made to put it
16 on -- the wax on with a cloth and then skate about the
17 place, you know, because they said it was a better job
18 than anything, you know, with these mats, you know, to
19 scrub and clean. So the furniture was all put outside.
20 You know, the kitchen sink and the cooker didn't, but
21 the furniture in the living room and the dining room
22 furniture. Curtains were took down and washed, windows,
23 frames, skirting boards. We would have had a bit of
24 lunch and then after lunch we would have carried on
25 cleaning till about teatime.

5.1 *The day beings for the girls when they are called at approximately 8.15 a.m. Between rising and departing for school they have breakfast and carry out their allotted services or chores”*

19. In response to Paragraph 9 and as indicated above, there was not daily Mass in St. Joseph's. I believe that HIA 376 is referring to our daily assembly. All the girls would have had their breakfast before leaving for assembly and school and this is also confirmed by the 1987 inspection report.

20. I believe the SR 243 that HIA 376 is referring to is SR 243 who was a member of our staff in St. Joseph's and who was one of four people, including tragically killed on when she was 37 by SR 243 was the fairest most just person I knew and I cannot believe that she would have behaved as HIA 376 alleges and I certainly do not believe any allegation that she would have beaten any girl. This is completely contrary to my memory of her and I knew her and worked with her for a number of years before she died.

21. At paragraph 10 (SJM – 062) HIA 376 sets out her recollections of the Saturday routine at St. Joseph's. Again my clear recollections are very different. During the time HIA 376 was resident I do not recall girls ever cleaning from 9.00 a.m. – 6.00 p.m. On Saturdays some of the houses did a more in-depth clean than others. This really depended on how each house completed their chores during the week. Saturday was always a relaxed morning with the girls sleeping in late, having breakfast and after a period of time there would have been a clean-up lasting no more than an hour. There is no possibility that all the furniture could ever have been moved out of the house to be cleaned. For a start we had some large, heavy

furniture. For example each house had a dining table of at least 6 feet in length which we would not have been able to move and other substantial pieces of furniture. My recollection is that the girls would have been asked to put the chairs around the dinner table on top of the table to allow them to clean the floor underneath. Again I make reference to the 1987 DHSS inspection report as set out below which reported on the structure of Saturdays at St. Joseph's at the time of their inspection.

"Saturday is a completely relaxed and unstructured day. The girls usually have a long lie in getting up between 12.30 and 1.00. There is some general housekeeping duties to be performed and the girls do this with the staff. The afternoons are spent in a variety of ways. The girls can play cards, listen to music, spend time walking or laying about outside if the weather is good. Sometimes shopping trips are organised into nearby towns of Armagh or Craigavon. Trips are made to forest parks, leisure centres or perhaps a picnic. The girls have a say in what they do, there is ample opportunity for freedom of action".

This is how I recall our Saturdays in St. Joseph's. I have also found one diary entry for 24 November 1984 which records **HIA 376** sleeping into 1.00 p.m. on that Saturday. I have marked this entry **BD4**.

22. At paragraph 10 (SJM – 062) **HIA 376** makes reference to a Sister **SR 275**. We did not have a Sister **SR 275** however there was a Sister **SR 275** who was in charge of House 2 at one point. Sister **SR 275** is now dead. From my knowledge of working with her I do not believe she would have grabbed or dragged or slapped **HIA 376** in the way she alleges. I must also dispute any suggestion that food would have been withheld from a child as punishment. This would have been totally wrong and was

1 cleaning on a Saturday. You say it happened and lasted
2 all day until your hands were raw. I was explaining to
3 you the congregation have said that's not how they
4 recollect the cleaning taking place. You would have
5 done chores every day. There would have been work on
6 a Saturday morning, but by lunchtime that would have
7 been it. That's not how you remember it.

8 A. No. We only had like hard leather chairs that went
9 round in a corner, maybe ten chairs like this, and every
10 single chair would have been put out into the garden and
11 then all the furniture had to get put out that was able
12 to get put out into the gardens, because of the fact
13 that the floors to be polished, and that -- you know,
14 instead of bringing in what I know now is a buffer
15 machine or a bumper machine, we were made to put it
16 on -- the wax on with a cloth and then skate about the
17 place, you know, because they said it was a better job
18 than anything, you know, with these mats, you know, to
19 scrub and clean. So the furniture was all put outside.
20 You know, the kitchen sink and the cooker didn't, but
21 the furniture in the living room and the dining room
22 furniture. Curtains were took down and washed, windows,
23 frames, skirting boards. We would have had a bit of
24 lunch and then after lunch we would have carried on
25 cleaning till about teatime.

1 Q. So you regarded that as excessive, the amount of
2 cleaning you were being asked to do?

3 A. Yes.

4 Q. You talk in paragraph -- that was paragraph 10. In
5 paragraph 11 of your statement you talk about kitchen
6 duty, being put on it, and again SR235 said to the
7 Inquiry there were chores that were normal. Everybody
8 did their share of them. I was drawing to your
9 attention there are some diary entries of you working in
10 the kitchen and being in good form and expressing
11 a positive view about that. I was showing you the diary
12 entry you will recall where you are recorded as knitting
13 a scarf for SR235.

14 A. For SR235.

15 Q. You don't have any memory of that yourself.

16 A. I remember knitting scarves. We were taught to knit and
17 crochet, you know, but -- what do you call it --
18 definitely not a scarf for SR235. I might have been
19 knitting a scarf, but, as I said, because we learnt, we
20 would have done a lot for Christmas time and for the old
21 people and stuff in the parish. So a lot of us were
22 knitting or crocheting.

23 Q. Well, I am not going to bring it up. The Panel have the
24 reference to that, which is at 959.

25 There is references in the diary, for instance, to

Submissions in relation to SJM 4

1. In relation to the running of the St Joseph's Home it is important to emphasise that most of the children were from troubled or difficult family backgrounds and often had deep emotional or psychological problems. Quite often the behaviour of some of the children was very disruptive. This is significant when considering the regime in the Home.
2. It was important to have an organised regime where the children would contribute to keeping the Home tidy and a reasonably pleasant place to live. Accordingly a rota system was in place to facilitate a fair distribution of daily chores such as brushing out the rooms, helping with the lighting of the fire and washing up after meals etc. It is important to stress that these were light duties and for the more substantial cleaning of the Home outside cleaners were employed
3. The vast majority of children had no problem with conforming to this form of discipline though some children did from time to time get bored and sometimes this resulted in some of them being disruptive.
4. The welfare of the children was the primary concern of the staff but a system of rewards and punishment was imposed to keep the smooth running of the school and to be fair to the children. This took the form of a points system where children were rewarded for good behaviour and punished for disruptive behaviour. Usually by taking away their cigarette ration or pocket money or some other recreation such as television. This was relatively light discipline and no action was ever taken to humiliate a child. It is also untrue to claim that the misbehaviour of one child could result in a blanket punishment which would effectively punish others.
5. Record books were used to record bad behaviour and other important events involving children such as home visits etc., once again the primary purpose was to facilitate the smooth running of the Home. These records were never kept or used to ensure that children were punished or to facilitate the punishment of children.
6. It is also important to emphasise that the children had plenty of recreation time to associate with each other and within reason to visit other children in another parts of the home.

1 you didn't want it, you would have got somebody else to
2 try and eat it for you, because you had to eat your
3 food. You know, there was force feeding, things like
4 that, if you didn't eat it.

5 Q. Are you saying that you were personally force fed?

6 A. Yes. Well, held down by a couple of nuns while the
7 other one shoved it into your mouth definitely. I don't
8 have anything with the food where there was anything
9 that really tasted of anything that was -- but there was
10 also very little of it. People used to -- this was what
11 the demands list was about, that we got -- it probably
12 sounds stupid, being children, being teenagers back
13 then, but the big issues were, you know, "Give us a bit
14 more butter. Give us another slice of bread. Give us
15 ..." It was just so small and so little that you could
16 barely scrape it on to the bit of bread that you had.

17 Q. When you say "the demands list", was that something
18 where you could say what you wanted or ...?

19 A. It was a time -- it has not come up today, because
20 obviously there is no report of that, but it is in my
21 book. There was a group of us that barricaded ourselves
22 in the refectory and said we were not coming out until
23 these demands were met. We stayed in there quite a long
24 time actually until obviously people then needed to go
25 to the toilet. You know, we were barricaded in there.

She also confirmed there being no difficulty in seeing her younger sister while in St. Joseph's, which may be significant given allegations made regarding later issues with HIA 176 and HIA 376.

She conceded letter writing to her family was not prevented (HE 184/46). Correspondence from a Borstal in England shows that correspondence from her sent to a sibling was being passed on (HE 184/41).

Her negative account of leaving the School and a lack of support is contradicted by the documentary record at (H 184/50-52).

43. HIA 161: In her book "Suffer the Little Children" this complainant gives an account which is not consistent with her statement and oral evidence, omitting details in either. We would draw attention to the following inconsistencies:

"girl in bath": witnessed on arrival. She did not actually see this take place, but asserted orally to have seen scratches on her back, a detail that is not in her statement (SJM 010 Paragraph 31)

She then asserted to the Inquiry at length about the practice of girls being dragged from their beds and washed in a similar manner (HE 184/143). This allegation was absent from her statement and book.

Similarly, no mention was made of a practice of having to sleep with your arms crossed, leading to her being beaten awake by SR 238 (HE 184/148).

No mention had previously been made of nuns tolerating girls fighting depending on "who was fighting" (HE 184/147)

Why would bedsheets need to be tied together to escape when there is no suggestion of the girls being locked into their dormitories? (SJM 010)

No reference to a punishment of "lines" for absconding was made in her statement (HE 184/158)

No prior reference to interference with her relationship with a boyfriend and the interception and retention of presents (HE 184/170)

Her overall picture of a violent atmosphere with girls fighting over a wide variety of causes is mentioned in neither her statement nor the contemporaneous records of the school.

At (HE 184/175) she describes SR 237 as asserting the girls "must have the devil in us" and punishment by being made to stand "for hours". No mention of this arises in her statement or contemporary punishment records.

Indeed, it appears there was no physical punishment being applied at the time. At (HE 184/177) she gave an account of being force-fed while being "held down by a couple of nuns." Again, this has not previously been alleged.

The Inquiry may consider whether such a series of extreme events are likely to have taken place and not been recalled until February 2016.

44. HIA 198: This Applicant's complaints centred around a lack of appropriate medical/social care intervention for her difficulties.

Of note in the context of the Inquiry's remit we would submit that it is telling that she

was a television in the living room. The living room also acted as a reception room for visitors. There was a kitchen, dining room and an entrance hall into the three classrooms of the primary school.

12. In the 1950s, I recall that children in their later teens would have slept in the Sacred Heart dormitory. Younger children would have slept in the Immaculate dormitory and St Joseph's dormitory, I believe, housed children in the age range eight and upwards. These age ranges could have changed over the years. The allocation of girls to a particular dormitory based on age could possibly explain why HIA 249 was separated from her siblings on arrival. HIA 249 would have had contact with her siblings during other parts of the day such as meal time and at school. There was only one dining room in the orphanage and three class rooms in the school. Different primary school classes were taught in the same classroom. I cannot confirm or deny that HIA 249 was placed in a cold bath or laundry basket. If this happened I believe it was wrong, however my recollection of Sister SR 248 who would have looked after the children was that she was a very caring, loving woman who would have been viewed by the children as a mother figure.
13. In relation to paragraph 3 (SJM-068) I cannot recall the exact number of girls in each dormitory. There could have been six or seven girls around the age of 3/4/5 years but the school records which I have marked BD2 suggest there was only one other girl the same age as HIA 249 (who was SJM 102). HIA 249 states that the Sacred Heart dormitory housed the senior girls. Fourteen or fifteen girls in one dormitory seems a lot based on my memories but I cannot be certain.
14. HIA 249 confirms that her younger sister SJM 27 was only eleven months old and she was the youngest child in the convent. The records confirm that SJM 27 SJM 27 had just recently passed her first birthday when she entered St Joseph's. I attach her admission record which I have marked 'BD3'.
15. When I arrived in St Joseph's, SJM 27 would have been 11 years old. In 1958 I was teaching needlework to older girls and although SJM 27 was not old enough to be in my needlework class, I do remember her. I recall that a number of older girls had finished primary school and they were making Christmas outfits. I remember having some contact with SJM 27 around this time. There were discussions about the special bond between SJM 27 SJM 27 and Sister SR 248. Sister SR 248 had looked after SJM 27

II

ST. JOSEPH'S REFORMATORY & INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL,
MIDDLETOWN,
Co. Armagh

She will get as much care here as she would get anywhere else. She has the companionship of her sisters and we will put no strain on her now, or at any future time.

At the moment it is impossible to get a suitable foster-mother for the baby. She is almost over her teething trouble, is beginning to walk and is on the whole in perfect health and looking very well.

At the time of Miss [REDACTED] visit she was in agony with the cutting of her teeth.

PRIVATE

together as a family. We had no privacy during these visits. I think this was because the older girls might have complained about the way we were treated. There was a nun there all the time with a stick behind her back. I remember going home for a visit once.

19. The nuns were very cruel to us. I don't think that being in prison would have been as hard for us. We had an awful time of it. I remember cleaning all the time and being beaten all the time. Once I found a half crown under one of the beds. The nuns put it there as a test to see if I cleaned underneath the bed and if I was honest. They would have beaten me if I did not find it or if I stole it.

Life after Care

20. I stayed in the convent until I was sixteen. I left there two days after my 16th birthday. I went home on [REDACTED] 1958 and my brother, [REDACTED] was born that night. After I came home my mother made me look after the rest of my younger siblings and do house work. I got a job in [REDACTED] one week after I left the convent and I worked there from the age of 16 until I was 24.

21. I married [REDACTED] when I was 24. [REDACTED] the butcher, thought we might like each other and he arranged for us to meet. It was a blind date before anyone had ever heard of Cilla Black. I have been married for forty nine years now. I have three children, [REDACTED] [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] They are good boys and I love my family. My other sisters are all dead and only [REDACTED] is living now. *SJM25 and are. I have two brothers [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] who are also still alive.* *NN*

22. I found it difficult not being able to read or write and even now I feel sometimes that I can't cope with money. I have difficulty sleeping at night and I don't like having doors closed at bedtimes. I have alopecia and all of my hair and nails fell out when I was 29 years old. I think it was because of the stress I experienced when I was at Middletown. I did get some counselling and treatment for stress at the [REDACTED] in [REDACTED] but my mother

** I have taken two or three overdoses. I was brought to hospital and had my stomach pumped. I can't remember how old I was but I know I HIA 249 was married.*

- 20.02.84 to 18.05.84
- 29.09.84 to 19.10.84

In the 1980s we in St. Joseph's did not have a firm policy about whether siblings should be placed together or separated when they were admitted. We did have some sibling groups but this was actually unusual. Other than the [REDACTED] sisters, I can only remember one other sibling group coming to us during my time at St Joseph's. At the end of the period of assessment for each girl in House 1 we would have decided which house placement would have best suited a girl. The four houses were each unique in terms of their structures and the respective staff and girls all of whom had a variety of personalities, strengths and skills. I recall that our general view was that in most cases it was usually better to have siblings separated. It was important for each child to have their own space and to develop their own identity bearing in mind that many of the girls who came to us had been severely neglected in their family units. Often there were particular tensions at home with either parents or siblings (or both) which had contributed to their behavioural difficulties and this would have been an important factor in not housing siblings in the same unit. I do recall that when HIA 376 came to St. Joseph's, HIA 176 had already been with us for a period of five months. I was aware that there were some difficult tensions between the two and also in relation to each of their relationships with their mother and father and I recall the girls would have both been vying for the attention of their mother. I cannot find any record which points directly to the consideration of whether the sisters should be housed in separate houses when HIA 376 was admitted to House 2 in July 1983. I believe that it would have been the view of the senior management team that placing them in different houses was in the best interests of each of the sisters. HIA 176 left St. Joseph's to return home on extended leave on 31st August 1983. She returned to St. Joseph's on 20th February 1984. The

1 A. Uh-huh.

2 Q. -- and saying that she will get on with you as long as
3 she doesn't see you.

4 A. Aye.

5 Q. You weren't aware of that and obviously that's
6 difficult, but at the same time you can then understand
7 why the congregation might say, "Well, how could we put
8 the two together in the way that's now being said of us
9 as a criticism?"

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. The point that SR235 makes in contrast to what you say
12 in your statement is that because the two you were the
13 same age, you would have been in the same class at
14 school, and therefore you would have seen yourselves --
15 each other would have been with each other all day in
16 effect in school. There was no barrier on you seeing
17 each other at night-time --

18 A. No, that's not true.

19 Q. -- for whatever was happening --

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. -- in the place.

22 A. I used to shout out the window so I did,
23 that I loved her and goodnight.

24 Q. Is that likely to have been after lights out, as it
25 were? So nobody would have been --

1 A. Yes, it would have been lights out or even if I seen her
2 about, but at school because there was four houses

3

4

5

6

7

8 Q. I'm not sure --

9 A. I would have seen her in the canteen at lunch time.

10 I would have seen her at assembly, so I would have, and
11 then maybe if we were down the village when we were took
12 down to spend our pocket money, you know, to get our
13 cigarettes and stuff, but if I asked them, "Can I see my
14 sister, please?", you know, it depended who was on,
15 what mood or what was going on. It was either a "Yes"
16 or a "No", but more times it was "No".

17 Q. In fairness to the congregation they are not saying as
18 far as I'm aware there was a deliberate decision that
19 you would not live together.

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. They are explaining why it is likely to be the case that
22 you weren't living together.

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. They have expressed the view that there weren't any
25 barriers in your way. Indeed, in fairness to them in

1 I had to take the tea and biscuits down to the lawn to
2 my mummy and daddy and to my sister HIA176, and
3 I wasn't allowed to talk to them and I wasn't allowed to
4 sit with them or stay with them. I was brought into
5 like a small television room and just looked out the
6 window at them. I can never -- I can never forget that,
7 like.

8 Q. Well, I think without going into the detail of it,
9 HIA376 --

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. -- you and I were agreeing that you went home for
12 weekend leave most weekends.

13 A. Yes.

14 Q. What SR235 has said on behalf of the congregation is
15 that the congregation's ethos was that they would give
16 each girl the opportunity to develop and the
17 relationship between the sisters would be relevant to
18 deciding whether they should be together or not. Here
19 the relationship wasn't good.

20 A. Uh-huh.

21 Q. You know, I was showing you one diary entry from
22 February '84, which was --

23 A. Aye.

24 Q. -- HIA176 coming back for her third spell while you are
25 still in your first spell --

completely inconsistent with how we sought to support and maintain links between the girls and their parents. There are diary entries which I have attached marked **BD2** also record the parental visits to see **HIA 376** and also when she may have phoned home. Please see by way of example only entries on 24 October 1983, 7 November 1983, 25 November 1983, 1 February 1984, 3 February 1984. I must also state that there is no evidence other than **HIA 376**'s statement that she suffered beatings in Middletown at any time.

27. At paragraph 15 (SJM – 063) **HIA 376** describes an incident in which she locked herself in the boot of a car and took an overdose of tablets when she was in House 2. I have not been able to locate any record of such an incident other than one record in the nurse's reports for St. Joseph's of **HIA 376** taking an overdose of 9 Phyllocontin tablets on 11.07.83 after which she was admitted to Craigavon Area Hospital and discharged on 13.07.83. The **SR 234** she refers to is **SR 234** who was a member of senior staff at St. Joseph's during the 1980's when **HIA 376** was resident. During my time in St Joseph's we never withdrew food from any girl either as a form of punishment or for any other reason. Had a girl taken an overdose it is likely she would have been hospitalised immediately. After her return to St Joseph's she would have been assessed and if appropriate received treatment through counselling and psychological therapies possibly remaining in her own house or if the case was very serious she would have been admitted to the intensive care unit at St. Joseph's. In my experience there would never have been a punishment meted out as **HIA 376** describes. A copy of the nurses entry for 11 July 1983 is attached marked **BD5**.

28. **HIA 376** then goes on at paragraph 16 of her statement (SJM – 064) to describe being taken to Monaghan by me. I can say without hesitation that the incident which she described did not happen. The only reason for the journey to Monaghan by car

1 I had to take the tea and biscuits down to the lawn to
2 my mummy and daddy and to my sister HIA176, and
3 I wasn't allowed to talk to them and I wasn't allowed to
4 sit with them or stay with them. I was brought into
5 like a small television room and just looked out the
6 window at them. I can never -- I can never forget that,
7 like.

8 Q. Well, I think without going into the detail of it,
9 HIA376 --

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. -- you and I were agreeing that you went home for
12 weekend leave most weekends.

13 A. Yes.

14 Q. What SR235 has said on behalf of the congregation is
15 that the congregation's ethos was that they would give
16 each girl the opportunity to develop and the
17 relationship between the sisters would be relevant to
18 deciding whether they should be together or not. Here
19 the relationship wasn't good.

20 A. Uh-huh.

21 Q. You know, I was showing you one diary entry from
22 February '84, which was --

23 A. Aye.

24 Q. -- HIA176 coming back for her third spell while you are
25 still in your first spell --

████████ worked in House 3. Sister **SR 243** ██████████, who was killed in an IRA bomb on 24th July 1990, worked in House 1 and not House 3. It is not correct that **SJM 44** ██████████ was the House mother of House 4. **SJM 22** ██████████ was employed on a semi-voluntary basis by St Joseph's as an aftercare worker and she was based in Belfast working closely with our hostel facility on the Falls Road.

12. In response to paragraph 11 I have previously confirmed in my response to ██████████ **HIA 376** ██████████'s statement that she was admitted to Craigavon Area Hospital. Our records confirm that she was admitted on ██████████ 1983 – ██████████ 1983 following a suspected overdose. There is no record of a visit by **HIA 176** ██████████ or that she requested such a visit. I think it is more likely that she did not want to visit her and I base this conclusion on the recorded entries we have confirming the difficult relationship between both siblings.
13. In paragraph 13 **HIA 176** ██████████ makes reference to the points system. I can confirm there was a reward system at St. Joseph's which was based on a points system. Every Saturday evening each girl was allocated 100 marks. If their behaviour both in the house or in the school was inappropriate then they lost marks. If their behaviour was good then they were allocated additional marks known as "plusses" which earned them extra pocket money. Every week each girl was then told how many marks they had left at the end of the week and marks were also allocated generally. The reading of the marks in each house was done collectively with all the girls from the house there and in the presence of the senior staff member who was on call for the weekend, the house mother and any other member of staff for the house who was on duty. If a girl lost a lot of marks then her pocket money would have been reduced however the behaviour would have had to have been very bad for there to have been no pocket money. I have attached a number of diary entries which record the marks lost and also plusses gained by **HIA 176** ██████████ during her time in St. Joseph's marked **BD 5**. I

PRIVATE

hugs but were pulled away. The following year the boys were sent back to [REDACTED] the day before we arrived so we had no communication with them. When we wrote to them during the year our letters were never sent. After I left care I went to visit my brothers but I was not allowed in. The nuns in St Joseph's would not let us see my sister as she had had a baby out of wedlock. They called her "unholy" and a "fallen woman". She came to see us once and they wouldn't let her in the door. She was waiting outside and if we hadn't seen her by chance and went over to her she would have been sent away without seeing us.

13. When someone official was coming to visit they gave you new bedding so we looked well provided for but once they left it was taken away and put back in the store room. We were told to be on our best behaviour and not to speak unless we were spoken to and when answering a question were told to be careful what we said.
14. They did not teach us anything about life or what to expect when you left. I was not even told when I was going to be leaving. I was playing a netball match one day and a woman called SJM44 [REDACTED] came and took me from the match. She brought me back to the home and gave me a suitcase packed with old fashioned clothes. I was not given the opportunity to say goodbye to my sister and was put in a car and taken to my great-great aunt's house. I had never met this relative before and I was left there with no explanation and no money. My great aunt and her family also lived in the house and they did not want me there. I could hear her arguing with her husband about me so I left and went to find my sister DL219 [REDACTED]
15. I stayed with DL219 [REDACTED] for a while but she lived in a bedsit with her partner and two children so it was very crowded. I was on the street again and was taken to [REDACTED] prison for 3 months. SR237 [REDACTED] took me out of [REDACTED] prison and brought me to the Santa Maria hostel.

1 put them back in the storeroom.

2 Q. I was saying to you that SR240 was saying that the
3 bedding was regularly washed and changed and so on and
4 you agree with that.

5 A. Well, of course, because I was in the laundry. So I was
6 I was the one doing the washing. So, yes, don't get me
7 wrong. They were -- the bedding was clean and
8 everything, because I done it myself, but what I'm
9 saying is that when, you know, official people came,
10 sure, they would bring out all the new, you know, stuff
11 like bedspreads and that and put them on -- give us them
12 to put on the bed, and as soon as they went, they were
13 wrapped up and put back in the storeroom.

14 Q. I think the point that SR240 is making to the Inquiry is
15 that that never happened in her time that she remembers.

16 A. Well, it didn't happen maybe in her time, but it did
17 happen in mine.

18 Q. Then in paragraph 14 of your statement, HIA203, you talk
19 about not being prepared for leaving --

20 A. No.

21 Q. -- and how basically on the day you were leaving you
22 were told you were going, and SJM22, the after care
23 worker, took you to Belfast.

24 A. That's right, yes.

25 Q. I was explaining to you that the Sisters point to

1 inspections may have been every other year, but I don't
2 remember them as being frequent. We were not given
3 a chance to talk to the inspectors privately."

4 A. That's right. That's right.

5 Q. Now the congregation have said to us that it wasn't the
6 case that you got new clothing just because inspectors
7 were coming. New clothing was given out regularly to
8 the girls --

9 A. No.

10 Q. -- on a regular basis. That's --

11 A. No, definitely not.

12 Q. You were saying to me earlier that you definitely
13 remember being given these clothes --

14 A. Yes, yes.

15 Q. -- and you knew that somebody was coming as a result.

16 A. That's right.

17 Q. You go on there -- as we were saying, you remember being
18 given small treats like sweets or Mars bar at birthday
19 or Christmas. You don't remember the nuns giving you
20 any particular special treats on your birthday.

21 A. No, no.

22 Q. There was Turkey dinner at Christmas, which you all
23 looked forward to for months beforehand.

24 A. That's right.

25 Q. You talk about the trips here, the good memories that

1 giving me clothes that a 40-year-old woman wouldn't have
2 wore. So ...

3 Q. The point about education, HIA203, is when you went into
4 St. Joseph's, you were already left. I think the school
5 leaving age was --

6 A. I understand all that there --

7 Q. -- 15.

8 A. -- but, you know, the fact is that they're saying about
9 job interviews. I never had any job interviews with
10 anybody. They never brought me to see anybody for jobs.
11 They never gave me any money. They just left me without
12 any money or any prospects. That there is the biggest
13 problem for most of the girls that was there the same as
14 myself. They all will tell you the same thing. They
15 were left with nothing.

16 Q. The last two questions that I ask each witness, HIA203,
17 the first one is about the recommendations, and I said
18 to you the Panel have to consider what recommendations
19 they might make to the Northern Ireland Executive about
20 three areas: some form of apology; some memorial of some
21 kind; or some other means of redress. We ask each
22 witness whether there is anything they want to say about
23 that. You probably also got a questionnaire about it,
24 but is there anything you want to say to the Panel in
25 your evidence about those issues?

155. It is of note that Rule 31 of the Training School Rules provided that each day should begin and end with a prayer; Holy Days should be observed in such manner as the Board of Management deemed appropriate; and where adequate arrangements could be made, religious instruction should be provided in a manner suited to the age and capacity of the pupils.
156. The SSI inspectors referred in their 1987 report to the Christian ethos of the school and on the fact that “*due attention is given to the performance of religious duties*”. They noted that girls were expected to attend Mass on Sundays and feast days, and they observed that prayers were said at morning assembly and before meals and that girls were encouraged to pray at night before retiring to bed. However, they did not suggest an excessive emphasis on religious observance (SJM 1540).
157. In their 1993 report the SSI inspectors stated explicitly that notwithstanding the fact that SJM was “*strongly influenced by a religious order, religion does not seem to be over-emphasised in the daily life of the school*” (SJM 1770).
158. The report of the regulatory inspection of 1994 noted that a prayer was said at morning Assembly and that girls attended Mass on a Sunday. However, formal prayers were not said at the end of the day, although each house was said to have its own way of marking the end of the day. The absence of evening prayers would tend to suggest that certainly at the date of that inspection religious observance was not excessive (SJM 2303).

school. It is **recommended** that the psychological input be increased as soon as resources permit, to allow work in the long-term units to be expanded.

Emotional Care

- 9.19 It soon becomes evident to the observer that promoting the emotional health of girls is an important and integral part of care provision at St Joseph's. Every effort is made to minimise the fears and uncertainties of each new arrival. There is a sensitive approach to helping new arrivals settle in and providing information for them. It has already been mentioned that transfer within the school is handled in a similarly sensitive way. Without undue pressure being exerted each girl is encouraged to form a relationship of trust with at least one adult in whom she can confide and discuss personal matters such as family problems, personal difficulties, anxieties, fears, hopes and ambitions. There is no obvious "professional distance" between staff and girls, indeed it is not unusual to witness healthy touching contact between staff and girls. Perhaps the underlying mainstay impacting on the emotional wellbeing of the girls is the natural blend of care and control which exists and its consistent application.
- 9.20 The stark future for many girls demands that "they grow up quickly" and become more self-sufficient. Those same girls because of poor nurturing and multiple bad experiences in their upbringing need to savour the comforts of dependence on others before they can hope to be truly independent. St Joseph's faces the dilemma of knowing that high standards of care promote dependency and that the emotional attachments created are often at their strongest when a girl's time at the school is running out. This dichotomy is recognised by staff who strive to find the best balance between these competing demands.

Spiritual Care

- 9.21 Although strongly influenced by a religious order religion does not seem to be over-emphasised in the daily life of the school. School assembly from Monday to Thursday during term time has a Christian rather than a religious emphasis and provision is made for attendance at mass each Sunday morning.
- 9.22 Contact with senior staff, residential staff and the girls together with opportunities to freely observe life in the school leads the Inspectors to describe care at St Joseph's as being of exceptionally good quality. The ingredients that seem to make up the recipe for high quality care revealed by the inspection are as follows:-
- i. Operational policies of the school are straightforward, unambiguous, accessible and seem to be understood by all concerned. These policies shape and guide day to day practice.

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN.

This school was inspected on 20th November, 1951. On that date there were 33 girls in the Training School, 22 junior and 11 senior. Earlier in the year there had been some absconding by four of the girls, but this appears to have happened under the influence of a recently-admitted girl of vagrant type who now seems to have settled down.

General Health of the Pupils:

The general health of the girls was well maintained during the year and there were no serious outbreaks of illness. One girl, SJM 33, died in hospital from chronic Pyelo-nephritis. SJM 27 was admitted to Crawfordsburn Hospital on 24th May, 1951, suffering from Tuberculous Glands. She was discharged to St. Joseph's School on 9th November, 1951. The general medical arrangements remain as described in last year's report. As the medical record cards were not seen on the day of the inspection a further visit was made on 8th March. Unfortunately, the School Medical Officer had taken the record cards home for the purpose of writing up the new medical record cards which have recently been obtained. All the children seen looked healthy, sturdy and well-cared for.

Buildings and Equipment:

All parts of the premises are as always clean, tidy and comfortable. Some small improvements have been made, such as the provision of extra presses and cupboards. The new bathroom has been completed; with the exception of the towel-rails, and is most useful. The re-wiring of the school premises has not started, but we were told it should begin soon. This means that the re-equipment of the laundry has not started either, so that the laundry work is still being done under difficulties, especially the drying of the clothes which has to be done by makeshift methods quite unsuitable for large quantities. Repairs to the drive and concrete area beside the school buildings have not yet started. Some minor repairs and decorative work are needed in the hall and stairs and landings leading to the dormitories. With these exceptions all is maintained in good order. The dormitories and dining-room make a particularly cheerful impression.

Diet:

We saw a satisfying meal being prepared in the kitchen. The appearance of the girls is the best recommendation for their diet!

Statutory Books:

The statutory books were inspected and found to be up-to-date. The punishment book records only minor infringements of discipline except for the absconders, who are indeed exceptional.

General:

The usual happy atmosphere prevailed, with everyone going about their tasks cheerfully and quietly. The girls' attitude to the staff and to visitors is pleasant and it is obvious that good relationships exist. The attitude of the staff to the girls shows itself too in the way they speak of them, affectionate, concerned and understanding.

We also visited a child who is boarded-out from the School, SJM 78, and found her to be very well cared for in an extremely happy home where she is completely one of the family. She attends the Convent Primary School.

Kathleen B. Faneor

Norman J. Simpson

I have visited the Training School many times
during the past year and I found children
very happy and everything very satisfactory
Rev. M. J. Conroy, PP

I have seen the children ~~present~~ of this school
monthly for the last 12 months & after during
meal time. They are well looked after as
regards food & clothing & always appeared to be
very happy.

Edward J. Hughes MRCVS

I noticed a very fresh look about the
corridors on my recent visit & was informed
that they had been painted & also the
bathrooms.

Elsie Hay

During my visit I noticed some new
faces among the children & was pleased to
see how well they were settling in to
the school routine.

Elsie Hay.

PRIVATE

14. We were given our dinner at 12.30pm and then we went back to school. After school we had to clean as well. We had to wash the floors and then put wax on them to shine them. It was hard to shine the floor without leaving scuff marks. We had to clean all the bathrooms, the sinks, everything. I remember being made to clean from a very young age, possibly 4 or 5.
15. We did not get enough to eat and I often went to bed hungry. Years later, when I was in my thirties, I remember running into a woman, **SJM38** in Middletown who went to school with us. She lived in the town and she said to me, 'God, I used to feel awful sorry for you, children, you looked as if you were starved'. We usually had porridge for breakfast or occasionally an egg. Then potatoes, cabbage and vegetables for dinner and a slice of bread and butter with cocoa for supper. The clothes we were given were provided by the De La Salle Order and although they were second hand, they were lovely clothes. We wore a white blouse, a tie and a navy skirt for school. The clothes were always clean and we were always told to wash ourselves. Our hair was also cut if it was too long. I was taken for medical appointments for my arm although I know from the papers I received that on occasion, at least one of these appointments was missed. I don't remember ever being told to do specific exercises to massage my hand or the muscles in my arm.
16. **SR237** came to me the day before my 16th birthday and told me I had to leave the convent. I wasn't given any warning and it was a complete shock to me. The nuns arranged a work placement for me at **SR237** factory in Belfast and board and lodging with an elderly couple. I was very young and it was all too overwhelming for me to adjust to in such a short time; Belfast seemed as strange as America to me then. I didn't know how to get around. I remember getting on buses and getting lost. I just cried my eyes out the whole of that first night and I ended up going back to Middletown the next day. The convent was a harsh environment but it was also my home. I wanted to be around familiar things and the girls I knew there.
17. I left Belfast the next day and came back to Middletown for a day or two but I wasn't allowed to stay. **SR237** organised a place for me in a hostel in

1 you didn't want it, you would have got somebody else to
2 try and eat it for you, because you had to eat your
3 food. You know, there was force feeding, things like
4 that, if you didn't eat it.

5 Q. Are you saying that you were personally force fed?

6 A. Yes. Well, held down by a couple of nuns while the
7 other one shoved it into your mouth definitely. I don't
8 have anything with the food where there was anything
9 that really tasted of anything that was -- but there was
10 also very little of it. People used to -- this was what
11 the demands list was about, that we got -- it probably
12 sounds stupid, being children, being teenagers back
13 then, but the big issues were, you know, "Give us a bit
14 more butter. Give us another slice of bread. Give us
15 ..." It was just so small and so little that you could
16 barely scrape it on to the bit of bread that you had.

17 Q. When you say "the demands list", was that something
18 where you could say what you wanted or ...?

19 A. It was a time -- it has not come up today, because
20 obviously there is no report of that, but it is in my
21 book. There was a group of us that barricaded ourselves
22 in the refectory and said we were not coming out until
23 these demands were met. We stayed in there quite a long
24 time actually until obviously people then needed to go
25 to the toilet. You know, we were barricaded in there.

1 So -- the demands were, you know, about the food, about
2 the treatment, about, you know, "We want this. We want
3 you to sort of give us a bit more -- give us another
4 slice of bread and another butter", you know, about the
5 punishments, about -- I can't remember all the demands
6 now, but some of them probably would have sounded pretty
7 ridiculous to somebody today, you know, that these were
8 big issues.

9 Q. As a result of that incident did you get any of the
10 demands met?

11 A. No, no, no.

12 Q. Can I ask about clothing? Were you able to wear your
13 own clothes and choose your own?

14 A. No, no. We had convent clothes.

15 Q. So clothes -- when you -- when you arrived in, you were
16 given clothes.

17 A. Yes. The Nazareth House gave us special clothes,
18 because obviously they were aware we were going to court
19 that day, and those clothes had to be sent back to
20 Nazareth House. They weren't clothes we had ever seen
21 before or worn before, but they were taken off us
22 straightaway and sent back.

23 Q. What was -- what were the clothes like that you were
24 given in St. Joseph's when you arrived?

25 A. Not uniform. Just -- apart from the aprons. We were

PRIVATE

yourself **HIA176** The girls eventually owned up and got a terrible beating. I also remember trips to **[REDACTED]** in September. We would have put on Christmas plays in Middletown for the staff and the girl's parents but my parents never came as Middletown was so far away. I had my sister there but we were separated and it was very isolating.

19. One of the girls called **SJM78** lived in my house. I remember on one occasion, she stole glue. She was a glue sniffer. **SR240** came into the classroom and pulled her out. We could see **SR240**'s office from our classroom. We heard screaming coming from her office and we could see her being beaten through the window. She used her hands to hit her.
20. I do not remember **SR240** having any favourite girls or ever showing any affection to anyone. We only ever saw **SR240** or **SR244** if there was a problem that they had to deal with.
21. **SR244** would have dished out the beatings in House 2. I witnessed her hit a Belfast girl called **SJM50**.
22. I went home at weekends sometimes with my twin sister. We were put on a bus and sent home. My mother and step-father were very abusive towards us but we were still sent back to them for weekends and holidays. I remember spending one Easter in Middletown and **SR243** came round with tins of sweets and cigarettes. I never smoked before I went to Middletown. It just seems ludicrous to me that cigarettes were given to me at fourteen years of age by nuns.
23. If we had a medical complaint, we would have seen the nurse, **SJM55**. If it was very serious, she would have made an appointment for you with the Doctor and the Doctor would have come into the school to see you. I remember seeing **SJM55**, the nurse on site, about my chest. She said it was just phlegm and was not concerned about the smoking. I was diagnosed with asthma when I was twenty-seven and I continue to have problems with my chest. I was never taken to the dentist the whole time I was there. It was never explained to me what

expelled from school for continuously poor behaviour, see **Exhibit 10**. She then returned home again on 18 May 1984, see **Exhibit 11**.

10. The Board notes paragraph 22 of the Applicant's statement where she says that she never smoked before she went to St Joseph's. **Exhibit 12** records that in 1981 the Applicant was afraid to see her father as she alleged he was going to beat her as she had been smoking. The exhibit notes that the Applicant had been given conflicting messages regarding smoking by her parents and that whilst her step-father prohibited it, her mother gave her permission to smoke after the Applicant had pressurised her.
11. In paragraph 25 of her statement, the Applicant says that when she was sixteen she was told she was leaving St Joseph's and that, as far as she understood, the Welfare wanted nothing to do with her because she was sixteen. Records in the possession of the Board detail that Social Services remained in contact with the family after 18 May 1984 and were involved with her subsequent readmission to St Joseph's, see **Exhibit 13**.
12. In paragraph 26 of her statement, the Applicant details her pregnancy and her return to St Joseph's. The Applicant states that she informed **SND 466** **SND 466** that she was raped by **[REDACTED]** and never got any help after the disclosure. **Exhibit 13** records that the Applicant returned to St Joseph's on 29 September 1984, see SJM 16554, following confirmation of her pregnancy and Social Services were informed that the relationship between the Applicant and **[REDACTED]** went back approximately three months. **Exhibit 13** further records that Social Services had spoken to the Applicant and to her parents about the dangers of **[REDACTED]** being involved with a minor prior to her becoming pregnant. The Board notes SJM 16599 – 16600 which appears to contain handwritten notes from the Sisters of St Louis and records that the Applicant stated that 'you couldn't refuse **[REDACTED]** **[REDACTED]**'. There are no records in the possession of the Board which detail the Applicant informing Social Services that she was raped. The Board further notes that **SND 466** **[REDACTED]** ceased to be the Applicant's Social Worker from 14 March 1983 when the case transferred to **SJM 79** **[REDACTED]**, see **Exhibit 14**.

mother would not be an option as she was at risk of sexual abuse. A handwritten note dated 17th June 1993 documents a discussion between HIA 233 and SJM 1 and reference is made to the abuse HIA 233 suffered at home. I have attached the relevant notes which I have marked 'BD7'. We did believe HIA 233 that this abuse had taken place. There was a psychologist working 2-3 days per week in St Joseph's. The ethos in the 1990s was to allow the girls to discuss these issues with the psychologist or their key worker, Team Leader or any member of the Senior Team. HIA 233 file confirms that initially she refused to engage with the psychologist but when she was older she did start to engage in counselling. I am disappointed that HIA 233 perception is that we did not believe her in relation to the abuse as this is not reflected in her file.

32. At paragraph 25 (SJM-026), HIA 233 describes the smoking regime in St Joseph's. Regrettably girls were allowed to smoke. Most of the girls who arrived at St Joseph's were already smokers. The girls purchased cigarettes with their own pocket money. They were then handed into the office and given out at certain times of the day. HIA 233 recollection that cigarettes were handed out 6 times per day is broadly accurate.
33. The reward system at St Joseph's was based solely on a points system. Every Saturday evening each girl was allocated 100 marks. If their behaviour both in the house or at school was not appropriate then they lost marks. If their behaviour was good they were allocated additional marks known as "plusses" which earned them extra pocket money. Every Saturday afternoon each girl was then told how many marks they had left at the end of the week and marks were also allocated generally to the House.
34. If a girl lost a lot of marks then her pocket money would have been reduced. We did not encourage any of the girls to start smoking and it was definitely not our policy to encourage smoking. The general consensus at this time was that most girls had already started to smoke before they arrived and our priority was to deal with behavioural issues and try to implement home and education structure into their lives. At that time preventing them from smoking was not our main priority. With the benefit of hindsight and given the knowledge which is now available in relation to the dangers of smoking, I accept that permitting smoking was not in the best interests of the girls.

ST. JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL, MIDDLETOWN

We inspected this School on 20th December, 1952. On that date there were 30 girls in the Training School, 22 Junior and 8 Senior. 5 Juniors and 2 Seniors were admitted during the year, and 6 Juniors and 4 Seniors discharged. There was no instance of absconding.

General Health

All the children seen looked well and happy. There has been no outbreak of infectious illness. The new Medical Record cards are now in use.

Buildings and Equipment

The premises were in good order throughout. Some painting has been done on the hall and stairways, so that the whole place looks very bright and clean. The laundry facilities have been much improved, especially for drying the clothes. The concrete area and drive have been repaired.

Activities

We have been very much impressed on our visits by the high standards reached in all departments, both in work and leisure activities. The bigger girls are not kept too long at one job, changing from kitchen in the morning to sewing-room in the afternoon, for example. The work in music, dancing etc. is excellent. Miss Forrest was particularly impressed on an earlier visit by the percussion band, which was conducted by an older girl, and in which even the youngest child (a 4-year old voluntary girl) could join, and did, with obvious enjoyment.

After-care

The new system of after-care by **SJM 22** appears to be working well, and the staff are well satisfied with the results. **SJM 22** is able to visit the girls regularly and also to visit the School so as to get to know her future charges.

General

The standards of care and training in this School remain excellent. It is evident that all the Sisters have the children's interests very much at heart. (We inspected and signed the statutory books, which were up to date.) The punishment book shows a very occasional record of 2 slaps or 4 slaps, but mainly punishment is by deprivation of privileges. In general the impression is one of firmness and kindness in the right proportions.

Norman J. Simpson
Kathleen B. Foster

31st December, 1952.

13. In paragraph 32 (SJM -011) HIA 161 states that she informed SJM 99 that she had canes and sticks broken over her all the time. Apart from the reference to SR 238 (paragraph 32 SJM010) HIA 161 does not give the names of the individuals who she claims perpetrated this abuse. There is no record in the logs of any such abuse. When HIA 161 returned from the first incident on 1st November she was interviewed by the Police. After the second incident her sister and two others were found to have stolen clothes and they were also interviewed by the Police. There is no mention of any other punishment. There was no link between these two attempts to run away and HIA 161 leaving Middletown. HIA 161 was due for discharge at the end of 1971 so it was natural for attempts to be made in the months before this date to find suitable employment.
14. On 9th January 1971, HIA 161 was taken to Omagh Hospital for observation. On 14th November 1971, SR 270 and her sister SJM 23 went to Omagh to visit HIA 161. She had already been discharged from hospital so I presume she was staying in Omagh with a relative. HIA 161 had an Aunt who lived in Omagh. On 17th February 1971 HIA 161 was interviewed by the Licensing Committee. The Licensing Committee was a review committee made up of two Board members and three or four external professionals who were responsible for reviewing girls two or three months before they were due for release. The remit of the Licensing Committee was to interview each girl, relevant members of staff from St Joseph's to ensure sufficient preparation had been made to enable her to transfer from care. In particular, the Committee would have focused on what job opportunities and accommodation was available to her and what further support could be given to her so that she could be released on license. It was confirmed that she could be licenced for discharge as soon as a suitable job became available. By this date HIA 161 was 16 years old. HIA 161 was taken to hospital by SR 239 on this date to have her eyes cauterised.
15. On 3rd March 1971, it is noted that HIA 161 and SJM 23 were going to Omagh for the weekend. They got the bus from [REDACTED] on 4th March and returned on 7th March. I presume they were staying with the Aunt referred to in paragraph 33 of HIA 161 statement.
16. It is recorded on 9th March 1971 that the [REDACTED] did not want HIA 161 or SJM 23 to visit them in Omagh again. SJM 3 who was a social worker and employee of St Joseph's agreed to contact the [REDACTED] and discuss the matter. It was also proposed that they ask the [REDACTED] to allow HIA 161 and SJM 23 to go for St Patricks'

PRIVATE

hugs but were pulled away. The following year the boys were sent back to [REDACTED] the day before we arrived so we had no communication with them. When we wrote to them during the year our letters were never sent. After I left care I went to visit my brothers but I was not allowed in. The nuns in St Joseph's would not let us see my sister as she had had a baby out of wedlock. They called her "unholy" and a "fallen woman". She came to see us once and they wouldn't let her in the door. She was waiting outside and if we hadn't seen her by chance and went over to her she would have been sent away without seeing us.

13. When someone official was coming to visit they gave you new bedding so we looked well provided for but once they left it was taken away and put back in the store room. We were told to be on our best behaviour and not to speak unless we were spoken to and when answering a question were told to be careful what we said.
14. They did not teach us anything about life or what to expect when you left. I was not even told when I was going to be leaving. I was playing a netball match one day and a woman called SJM44 [REDACTED] came and took me from the match. She brought me back to the home and gave me a suitcase packed with old fashioned clothes. I was not given the opportunity to say goodbye to my sister and was put in a car and taken to my great-great aunt's house. I had never met this relative before and I was left there with no explanation and no money. My great aunt and her family also lived in the house and they did not want me there. I could hear her arguing with her husband about me so I left and went to find my sister DL219 [REDACTED]
15. I stayed with DL219 [REDACTED] for a while but she lived in a bedsit with her partner and two children so it was very crowded. I was on the street again and was taken to [REDACTED] prison for 3 months. SR237 [REDACTED] took me out of [REDACTED] prison and brought me to the Santa Maria hostel.

1 filling out the certificate.

2 A. Oh, maybe, yes, but I know like it is my name but it was
3 spelt in a different way.

4 Q. Well, that's one quirk, but I will see if we can get the
5 certificate for you in any event. So that's something
6 --

7 A. Yes. That's wonderful. I can't believe that. Do you
8 know what I mean?

9 Q. I am not going to go into the detail of it with you,
10 HIA203, because it's after your time in St. Joseph's,
11 but after you had left and you had begun work and then
12 problems had arisen and you had been taken to
13 Prison --

14 A. That's right, yes.

15 Q. -- sent there by the court, you explain in your
16 statement in paragraph 15 that SR237 came and got you
17 from the prison --

18 A. She did.

19 0. -- at the end of your sentence.

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. She got you a place in the hostel in

22 .

23 A. That's right.

24 Q. SR240, for instance, on behalf of the Sisters of
25 St. Louis point to that piece of behaviour by SR237 as

1 evidence she genuinely cared for your welfare in that
2 she didn't have to do it, but went and did this and got
3 you into somewhere to live, because there was
4 difficulties in the family --

5 A. That's right.

6 Q. -- that I am not going to go into.

7 A. Yes.

8 Q. You were saying to me that she wasn't always a harsh
9 person with you.

10 A. No, no, no. She wasn't. I mean, in most cases she was
11 pretty fair, but there was occasions where if you tried
12 to tell her something, she didn't always believe what
13 you were saying. You know, like in my case like being
14 sick and all, she didn't believe it when I was telling
15 her.

16 Q. So that was SR242 and SR237 --

17 A. And SR237, yes.

18 Q. -- who you felt didn't really -- we will come to that
19 very shortly. So your experiences with SR237 weren't
20 all bad.

21 A. No.

22 Q. In paragraph 11 of your statement, if we go to 055,
23 please, you explain about this medical issue of having
24 the mumps.

25 A. That's right.

1 was discussed."

2 Then SJM3, who we know was a social worker, visited
3 your family in

4 "She advised against allowing neither HIA161 nor
5 [name redacted] to live with family on a permanent
6 basis. Instability seems apparent here also. Other
7 factors enter in. For example, mother" -- that's your
8 own mother -- "was well-known in town."

9 Then on the 12th:

10 "Job accepted for HIA161. HIA161 very pleased. She
11 is to go after St. Patrick's Day break on Friday, March
12 19th."

13 So it looks as though coincidentally this family in
14 ring up looking for a girl for a live-in job.
15 They immediately think of you, because they were looking
16 -- they had decided at this stage to look for a live-in
17 job for you. That's how you ended up where you did in
18 , where you were unhappy.

19 A. Well, again I didn't know anything of this. When I left
20 Middletown, I knew about five, ten minutes before I was
21 going. I did not know anything up until that point.
22 I was informed that I was going. I was given a small
23 suitcase. A man turned up to take me and, you know,
24 like I say, ten minutes before I didn't even know I was
25 getting out. So I am totally unaware of any of this

PRIVATE

32. The training I got in Middletown helped me to get a job we did different tasks and were given a small amount of money. They helped me to get a job at an old people's place in [REDACTED] County Down. It was also run by nuns but again they weren't very nice. I lived and worked there for a short period of time.

33. One day when I was coming into Belfast to visit my mum I was at a wee cafe near the train station in [REDACTED] I was having a cup of tea and I got talking to this lady and asked had she any jobs. She gave me a job even though I had no experience. I moved back home which I wasn't allowed to do. The welfare called a few times but my mum said I wasn't there. The final time they called my mum said that I was nearly eighteen and that I was doing well and they left me alone.

Life After Care

34.

35.

36.

37.

38.

1 Committee meetings or anything, but they came for their
2 meetings.

3 Q. But they didn't have an involvement -- there wasn't --
4 they didn't visit any of the units or engage with the
5 girls?

6 A. They probably did, and certainly members of the
7 Management Committee did visit the units as far as
8 I remember. You see, I'm vague about the involvement
9 with the units, because I didn't work -- ever work in
10 any of the units myself.

11 Q. Can I just ask about the attitude to girls becoming
12 pregnant, what the attitude of the --

13 A. Well, they were cared for and were taken immediately for
14 medical attention. It was considered that it was -- you
15 know, a girl who was pregnant needed to be cared for and
16 helped in whatever way she needed help, and that would
17 again be done by maybe at home or in the hostel on the
18 grounds at Middletown. Girls -- we had a hostel on the
19 grounds for girls who were moving out of the units and
20 staff there. So some girls would be there -- if they
21 had given birth to a baby, would be there with the baby
22 for a while, maybe getting some help taking care of the
23 baby.

24 Q. But there wouldn't be a sense that there would have been
25 a very critical approach to them?

1 A. Oh, no, no.

2 Q. Can I just ask about that? Once the Falls Road and then
3 the Glen Road was set up, did the hostel in St. Joseph's
4 in the ground continue?

5 A. Oh, it did, yes, yes.

6 Q. So there was a kind of a throughput?

7 A. Yes, it was a kind of a stepping on/off place from the
8 training school experience into the community. So it
9 could end up being into the hostel, then into the Glen
10 Road or wherever.

11 Q. Thank you very much, Sister.

12 A. Thank you.

13 MR LANE: Did you ever do any follow-up work a long while
14 after the girls had left to see how they were getting
15 on?

16 A. Yes, indeed. With the field social worker we often
17 visited girls who had settled down often in their own
18 accommodation with maybe a child or two. I remember
19 visiting girls who were setting up their own home.

20 Q. Did many of them come back to visit St. Joseph's later
21 on?

22 A. A lot do. A lot of the girls who left still keep in
23 touch with us and do come to visit or are constantly in
24 touch with us. In fact, just yesterday I wrote a letter
25 to one of the girls, who is now forty years of age, and